

Marcel Ray Duriez

Ethereal

Interval: 1 Scared of My Past

Part: 1

Your time is limited, so do not waste it, living someone else's life,
that is what my tombstone said along with 1991 to 2094 I have seen a century-
yet stayed the age of 14 all those days after me on ending.

~Emmah~

A Golden Hour like a filter starts to deliver as I see the images before me more fervent than ever in my world, and autumn has set in and all the trees are multi mixed color, with falling and blowing leaves in the wind falling on top of Trinity Cemetery, and Haunted Woods Mausoleum and the wall of bones for the ones that past to the end of last life in this world.

-And-

Likewise, the tint to our world, more pliant, ever more radiant. Pretend a minimum with the Amount slider and the Saturation sliders determine the general coloration vibrancy a mesmerizing touch of sunrise or sunset lighting to the images to overlook. In the sky, there are many bats, wing web flying foxes, and black crows

Over a valley of the Atrecovaria Empire and magical glowing river, swindler without A conscience a black steel A- like truss bridge passes up to and past the gothic castle, to the magical railroad.

Then past the village of Hayvannahol, line the links to Earth, going past Angel watch Memorial Gardens, The Azazel Barrel Tavern that is suspended in the air swaying in the wind with unlikely height to it the trees and the red-orange golden enchanted river leading to its sea full of mermaids, coral reefs.

Then underneath the pillars, looking up along many cars, the steam train passing at the tippy top is moving swiftly with oncoming passengers making the journey to the other side.

Commencement-

Hope is the leader of the children with back or no eyes, on earth, you can see them in the forbidden woods around my home, or I could when I was a child just like them at times.

'My God, you two stop you are like rabbits.' Said hope looking in on us, back when I was 14.

Nevaeh- 'I remember the first time that we had sex he put my feet and legs start-up in the air as I was on my back, and his arms were holding them tightly wrapped around, as he slid down in me for love.

But I remember when I say my grandmother give the live Naddalin a lobotomy, to cut the strings to her front brain to the rest, a called nuts mind, over she would not conform to cities and the schooling idolized programs for a 5-year-old child, I am blessed that I walked away.

Which is about the same as having your ass reamended by your stepfather, and yes, I have that too, in the butt, not the head. Naddalin being my triplet sisters this is what I would be the same... (The minds of the normal?)

They made holes in use whatever way they needed for their sick perdure or made them bigger for the enjoyments.

Like a railroad spick through the brain, I remember feeling it all until there was nothing left to feel as she was left next to dead in a way her life as over from the first hammer tap into the side of her eyeball to crack her skull and scramble her young brains like morning eggs.

‘Yet the childlike me- Nevaeh was said to be crazy to by my school and hometown.’

‘Why?’

‘Why indeed?’

My life and past reports by others in my school were nothing more than on a long shirt. Blandishment, cult, persuasion, inducement, Mafia, you get it. I remember them going balls deep in me with nothing to give me, other than the taste of dick, and I had my share of doing that too as a girl.' And I plan to take by the mop of the hair and smash their face into a pile of human shit and make them eat it like a dog.

Part:

Even as the god of the fallen angels can be afraid of her past, I am, I am horrified. I recall I can sense it, the whole in my chest. I remember the night

hang from the tree when AVA walked up yet not human at first a black crow then as the fight came closer to me it when into a yellow ball flashing lit fluttering orb first then manifested into ectoplasm and ecto-mist the shadow of a girl of hands started touching my body, all translucent until she had everything, she needed from my body to make heir's whole once more.

She moved now looking more like a see-through girl slowly to my naked lifeless body and cut my heart out with a knife, it was still beating, in her small hand, with my blood dripping down her arm.

Yet still pupping, the flash has unwillingly taken still alive, and very much raw, she bet into it and eats more than a large bite, it still it forevermore. Therefore, I feel in the afterlife now I have known my heart to have a beat.

Ash like paper rushed out of my mouth as my head ripped back letting out the ashes of a teenage girl's sinners' life of evil pinnacle, my eyes went black rolling in my had like a hard culmination body moment and vocal crescendo, my chest ripped open with the light of the sun brighter and hotter, as the soul lifted, out and above my hung body.

My arm bone ripped from my body, the fingertip of AVAs was cut off at that very moment awaiting in a large pot formed by my feet under me hanging and blue frames shot around me licking my body, as all my body parts were

taken for her to still my life from me, so she could live forever as the dark lord goddess, not I.

And at that moment she was made, human once more as a copy of me, not to her beholding at this time I have already spilled my body and mind into parts of my twin sister thus I have found out before them that I am one of the identical triplets, and my mind is now in my dead sister's body come to life as Naddalin.

~*~

The time is altered. And I need Naddalin to feel it too. She is not lying-seriously-her said- Not even terminating the thought before Haven leans forward, eyes darting connecting us as she says, ‘Okay, that is it. Just what is going on here? Thoughtfully, sufficient previously.’

I turn, regarding how her friendly yellowish aura beams in such a swift sharp distinction to the intentional tyranny of her all-black ensemble. Knowing she means no ill will though she is unmistakably disturbed by us.

‘Completely, absolutely, and undividedly It is like you guys have some sort of creepy way of telling. Like twin speak or something. Only yours is hushed. Furthermore, more ghostly.’

I shrug and sit yonder with my lunch, going by the acts of unwrapping a sandwich, I've no plans to eat, estimated out to hide just how alarmed her mystery has made me feel.

Knocking my knee against Naddalin's, telepathically urging her to step in and handle since I've no idea what to say.

'Don't pretend it's not happening.' Her eyes narrow in suspicion. 'I've been watching you guys for a while now, and it's starting to creep me out.'

'What's creeping you out?' She gazes up from her phone, but only for a moment before she is back to texting again.

'Those two.' Sher points to a short, black painted nail with a chunk of pink frosting stuck to its tip. 'I swear, they get stranger every day.'

Naddalin nods, setting down her phone as she takes a moment to look us over. 'Yeah, I have been meaning to mention that. You guys are weird.' She laughs.

'Oh, and the whole glove thing?' She shakes her head and purses her lips. Bestowing her hand looking all shattered with fishers and red. 'So not striving for you, I said facetiously.'

Haven frowns, annoyed by my joke when she is trying to be grave.

‘Laugh all you want,’ she says, gaze steady, unwavering. ‘But something is up with those two. I may not know what, but I will figure it out. I will find the underlying cause of it. You will see- you will see.’

And I am about to speak when Naddalin shakes her head and swirls her red drink, leaning toward Haven as she says, ‘Do not waste your time. It is not as sinister as you think.’

She then smiles, gazes fixed on me.

‘We’re practicing telepathy powers of mind-reading, that’s all.’

‘Attempting to read each other’s minds in place of talking all the time.’

‘So, we stop getting in trouble in class over it took over the face we take over each other’s bodies and movements too at times, a real headache for the professors.’

She snorts, causing me to squeeze my sandwich so hard the mayonnaise oozes out and squirts grossly out the backside. Gaping at my significant other who has just arbitrarily decided to break our number one rule- do not tell anyone who we are or what we can do! This is something we worked hard to do, looking within the library in the restricted section of dark magic.

Calming only slightly when Haven rolls her eyes and says, ‘Please. I am not an idiot.’

‘Wasn’t implying you were.’ Naddalin smiles. ‘It is quite real, I assure you. Would you like to try?’

I freeze, body solid, unmoving, as though seeing a disaster on the side of the road-only the disaster is me.

‘Close your eyes and think of a number between one and ten.’ She nods, sincere gaze meeting her. ‘Focus on that number with all of you might. See it in your mind as clearly as you can, and silently repeat the sound of it repeatedly, got it?’

Sher shrugs, brows merging as though in deep concentration. Though Choosing to concentrate on blue instead of a random number like Naddalin said.

All it takes is a glance at her aura, morphing into a dark deceitful green, and a brief peek at her thoughts to see she is only pretending.

She was holding her ground as she rubbed her chin and shook her head, saying, I glance between them, ‘I do not seem to be getting anything. Are you sure you are thinking of a number between one and ten?’ Knowing she is baiting her, sure that her one in ten chances of hitting the right number works too much in her favor.

Sher nods, deepening her focus on a beautiful shade of pulsating blue.

‘Then we must have our wires a-crossed.’ She shrugs. ‘I’m not getting a number at all.’

‘Try me!’ Emmah abandons her phone and her books, and wands and leans toward Naddalin.

Eyes barely closed, thoughts hardly focused before Naddalin gasps, ‘You’re going to Haven?’

She shakes her head also.

Part:

(A week back)

‘Three... For your data, the number was three.’ She rolls her eyes and leers. ‘And everyone knows I am going to France. So-nice try.’

‘Everyone but me,’ Naddalin says, jaws clenched, face gone suddenly pale.

‘Well, I am sure everyone has told you- you of all. You know, telepathically.’ she laughs, returning to her phone again, saying ‘sometimes old school kicking it is not the way to go anymore I prefer these,’ and she holds up the phone, which links all the magical networks together.

I peer at Naddalin, wondering why he is so upset over the trip. I mean, yes, so she used to live there, at one time when she was alive- after her boyfriend passed away in an industrial accident or something like that- she was vague about did not want to say... all that much, she said she was in her late 20's.

She said something odd on her tombstone and it read- (I have not stuck with me all my whole life, so there-) and I got what it meant. Yet it said, 'I will live on forever...' or something like that, or 'I don't need you!' - 'or even suck on that!' Like- I thought that is what it may have said- but- but nah- it can't be yet maybe?

...It is a cracked heart-shaped stone...

Part:

But- but that was hundreds of years ago, and the stone is crumbling and reading the rest has disintegrated to dust into just the wind!

I squeeze her hand, urging her to look at me, but she just stares at Haven with that same stricken look on her face.

~*~

'Nice try with the whole telepathy angle,' Haven says, swiping her finger across the top of her cupcake until it is coated with strawberry frosting, and she was licking her finger and kissing the end of it too.

‘But I am afraid you are going to have to try a little harder than that. All you have managed to prove is that you guys are even weirder than I thought. But no worries, I will find the underlying cause of it. I will expose your dirty little secret before long.’

I hold back a nervous laugh, hoping she is just messing around, then peering into her mind only to see that she is serious.

‘When are you leaving?’ Naddalin asks.

But only to appear conversational, has already uncovered the answer in her head.

‘Soon, but not soon enough,’ she thought, eyes lighting up, as she stared at her. ‘Let the countdown begin!’

Naddalin nods, gaze unstiffening as she says, ‘You will love this.

Everyone loves it, France is a lovely, delightful place.’

‘You’ve been...?’

...?...?

I and Haven both asked at the same time.

Naddalin nods- 'I's have,' gaze far away in the back of her on the mind and thought looking- blank to us looking at her color fading from her eyes. 'I lived there once-a long time ago.'

'That's what we gathered...' they both said it unanimously!

Haven glances between us, eyes narrowed again when she says, 'Jaylynn and Naddalin lived there too, around the same time, she looks at her one eyelid squinting.'

Naddalin shrugs, expression noncommittal, as though the connection means nothing to her. She said at that moment to me that I needed to remember to 'judge quickly and love slowly.'

'Well, don't you deem that is a little outlandish? All of you living there at the same time, in the same place, then all of you completing up here- within periods of each other?'

Sher leans toward her, abandoning her cupcake and letting it drop in search of some answers.

She just sips her blue drink and lifts her shoulders again, as though it is hardly worth going into, in the past she thought, to her, in though conversation.

But Naddalin's solid, refusing to cave or do anything that might give it away.

'Is there anything I should see while I'm there?' Haven asks, more to break the tension than anything else. 'Anything that shouldn't be missed?'

Naddalin squints, pretending to think, even though the answer comes quickly.

~*~

'All of France is worth seeing... yes is it not?'

But you should check out the Ponte Vecchio, which is the first bridge to cross the Arno River and the only one left standing after the war where every inch of France was covered in their blood.

Oh, and we must visit the Galleria dell' Accademia which houses Michelangelo's David among other important works, and perhaps the-

'Definitely hitting David,' Emmah says wanting this so badly.

'We... yes we're taking you to a girl- surprise!'

'We did not want to tell you.'

'As well as the bridge, and the important Il Duomo, and all the other items that make every travel guide top ten lists, but I am more absorbed in the

smaller, off-the-beaten-path kind of places- you know, where all the cool Florentines go.

Naddalin was raving about the one place, I forget the name, but it is supposed to house some incomprehensible revitalization artifacts, paintings, and stuff few people know about.

Did you get anything like that? Or even clubs, shopping, that?’

Naddalin looks at her, gaze so intense it sends a chill down my spine.

‘Nothing offhand,’ she says, trying to soften the look though her voice betrays a definite edge.

‘Though any place that claims to house great art but is not in the guidebook is a fake. The antiquities market is loaded with forgeries.

You should not waste your time on that when there are so many other, far more interesting things to see.’

Haven shrugs, bored by the conversation, and already back to texting again. ‘Whatever,’ she mumbles, thumbs tapping quickly. ‘No worries. Naddalin said she would make me a list.’

(Back home)

‘I’m amazed by the progress you’ve made- Dariez.’ Naddalin smiles.

‘You learned all on your own?’

She nodded, and gazing around the small, empty room, pleased with me for the first time in weeks, when I walked into the tiny house.

The moment Naddalin mentioned she wanted to rid the place of all the overly slippery furniture, that was cheap she had filled it with during Naddalin’s reign of fear, I was on it, to make this place fit for too young lady’s- all cute and such.

Aiming at each piece with such unchecked enthusiasm that-well-I am not even sure where it went. All I know is it is no longer there I want to be-and she points at the old home she was half-grown in- and you were right.

‘Looks like you are no longer in need of my lessons. She shakes her head, saying you wring I need you more now than ever.’

‘Don’t be so sure.’ I said back quickly.

I turn, smiling as I push her dark wavy hair off her face with my newly gloved hand, hoping we will get that cure from Naddalin soon, or at least produce a less hokey alternative. Dariez is a good kid... you will do fine.

‘I have no idea where all this stuff even went-not to mentioned, how I can’t possibly fill up space, even more, when I have no clue where I am stashing all the stuff you used to have and me before getting all this.’

Reaching for her hand a second too late and frowning as she walks over to the window- I feel as if I have lost my sister.

‘The furniture’-her gazes out at her manicured lawn, voice low and deep-’is right back where it started, what seemed like forever ago, yet was only about a year.

‘I don’t like change-’ she said- out of breath.

Returned to its original state of pure vibrating energy with the potential to become anything at all. She looks in the glass ball- and sees her new life coming.

And as for the rest-’ She shrugs, the strong lines of her shoulders rising ever so slightly before settling again. ‘Well, it hardly matters anymore, does it? I do not need it now.’

‘I don’t like change-’ she said- out of breath.

Returned to its original state of pure vibrating energy with the potential to become anything at all. She looks in the glass ball- and sees her new life coming.

And as for the rest-' Her shrugs, the strong lines of her shoulders rising ever so slightly before settling again. 'Well, it hardly matters anymore, does it? I do not need it now.'

I stare at her back, taking in her lean form, her casual stance. Doubting how she could be so-o blasé in reclaiming the precious artifacts of her past...

The pictures of her in plain pink dresses back in the day, the astride a rearing white stallion-not to mention all the other amazing relics dating back centuries...

'Nonetheless, those objects are priceless, see her life now within mine forever! You must get them back, don't you? They can never be replaced, yet you can with new lives, can't you?'

'It's all energy!' She squeals.

~*~

'Ever so, relax. It is just stuff.' Her voice is firm, resigned, as she turns toward me again. 'None of it has any real meaning. The only thing that means anything is you.'

-And-

Even though the sentiment is undeniably sweet and heartfelt, it does not affect me in the way that it should.

The only thing she seems to care about these days is apologizing for her karma and me. 'But that is where you are wrong. It is not just stuff- too.'

Oh, I am sorry, I felt so bad hugging her from one side.

-And-

While I am perfectly fine with those inhabiting the number one and two spots on her list, the problem is the rest of the page is blank.

I move toward her, voice wiles, wheedling, hoping to reach her and make her listen to the time.

-And-

Just like that, my mind is ripped into another time and place...

(Back into a week into the trip)

It is history for God's sake, we need to get books and have them signed, it was said this man write 30 books in one year, yet I am not sure if she was still alive! I so he would be over 90 now...

'Like, you cannot just shrug it off as though it is nothing more than a box of tired old books, of tired old objects you donate to Goodwill...'

‘I thought they were worth remembering- like the one about a would be lost without color or feeling, or the one about a girl that fought for her place, as an equal- the youngest in her class.’

Look at this thing, the covers are all tattered, and the pages small.

She then looks at me, gazes softening as she trails the tip of her gloved finger from my temple to my chin. ‘I thought you hated my ‘dusty old room’ as you once called it.’

Look at this thing, the covers are all tattered, and the pages small.

She then looks at me, gazes softening as she trails the tip of her gloved finger from my temple to my chin. ‘I thought you hated my ‘dusty old room’ as you once called it.’

‘People change, and so did I.’ I shrug, thank you for asking why?

Wishing, not for the first time, that she would change back to the Naddalin I knew before she was her...

‘And speaking of change, why are you so freaked by my ’s trip to France?’

Noting the way, she hardens at the mere mention of the word.

‘Is it because of the whole Haven and Nevaeh- become Naddalin thing of remembering the past- and not wanting to, and then gave that up to Karly? Why? The connection you do not want her to know about?’

Yet were there the good times- I do not know...? She thought...

She looks at me for a moment, lips parting, about to speak, then she turns away and mumbles insanely, ‘I’m hardly what you’d call freaked.’

‘You know what...?’

You are right.

For a normal person, that was hardly what you would call a freaked.

But for the girl who is always the coolest, calmest one in the room-all it takes is the slight narrowing of your eyes and the most minute clenching of your jaw to know you are upset.’

She sighs, eyes searching mine as she moves toward me again. ‘You saw what happened in France.’ She then squints. ‘Despite all its virtues, it’s also a place of unbearable memories, ones I’d rather not explore.’

I swallow hard shaking looking into her past- like a faded movie, remembering the images with her, I viewed in looking deep into her memories...

Then lost in her mind, ‘like a penny on the floor... worthless- my depression a sickness that keeps me, spring-like atop- my mind turning, my curse- or just my illusion?

Until my death, until we part for better or for worse- locked in your heart-shaped box forever, I thought or was thinking nothing but decillions, what little time we spent lost in my mind forever- whatever never mind.’

-Naddalin is hiding in a small dark cupboard, watching as her parent was murdered, seeing it along with me, she and I shared recalling the moment, back when she was in her playpen.

By thugs’ intent on obtaining the elixir-then later, abused as a ward of the church until the Black Plague Covid-19 swept through France and she encouraged Haven and the rest of the orphans to drink the immortal juice, hoping only to heal and having no idea it would grant eternal life-and I cannot help but feel like the world’s worst girlfriend for bringing it up.

‘I prefer to focus on the present.’ She nods, gesturing around the large empty room. ‘And right now, I need your help furnishing the space. I am starting to like a nice, clean, contemporary look when shopping for home decor.

-And-

Though I was thinking of leaving it more than empty, to emphasize the size of the rooms- that well varies tiny, I suppose we should try-' I gasp, practically choking on the word as my voice raises several octaves at the end, think that these girls in now a woman!

'I'm selling the house- in a year and moving on with my life.' She shrugs.

'I thought you would understand?'

But- you can your one of us now...

I gaze around, longing for that ancient velvet sofa with the lumpy cushions...

Then at that moment, knowing it would give the perfect landing for when my body with I am so tired I collapse and my head quietly explodes, for all the chatter- that it must here and there are no ways of turning them off...

-And-

They just keep babbling in my mind. I need to have a real-life with real- real- you like all things that are real- like real friends too, not just the fantasy world that you refuse to see that is not a reality.

'Don't look so upset.'

'Nothing has changed It is just a house. A seriously under the oversized house, I need to move on from.'

-And-

Likewise, just like that she was gone and said OKAY if that is what you want Dariez... and Naddalin vanished right before her eyes.

Nonetheless, I just stood there instead, determined to keep it together. Gazing at my ridiculously gorgeous girlfriend of the last years as though it was the first time we had met.

Besides, I have needed all the space anyway, I have a new boyfriend, as you may or may not know, me and Stan are going to have a baby. there are never going to be enough rooms or rooms for three.'

'And what exactly are you planning to replace it with, then? ...A tent?'

'I just thought I'd move in with him, that's all.' Her gaze is pleading, begging me to understand, I did yet I thought she was throwing her new life away that I got for her, 'Nothing sinister, Ever- yet a way of what could be power- and taking my place someday- ever one said the next. 'Nothing meant to hurt you, but I don't want it.'

I did not say- yet I thought you are stuck with regardless, you are hexed, and at that point, I was out of her mind- for good- yet them- they were in it forever, and I was not going to stop it now.

I was studying her closely, wondering what had gotten into her, wanting to just say it was all over, and where they would end up without her- yet she said to me- he is looking for innocents and he has found it- so-o go-o.

‘I mean, Naddalin, if you are seriously looking for a fight, I do not want it, why not just manifest something in your crazy head about how wrong I am and can go on?’

I flick my gaze over her, moving from her glorious heart of longish dark glossy hair to her perfect rubber flip-flop–shod feet, remembering how, not so long ago, I longed to be normal again, just like everyone else. But now that I am getting used to my powers, I do not see the point.

‘What’s this really about- I thought?’ I squint, feeling more than a little betrayed.’

‘I mean, you’re the one who got me here.’ Oh, I was- mortified.

You are the one who made me the way- I am.

Right- needed that I am finally adjusted, you decide to jump ship?

‘Seriously! Why are you doing it?’

But instead of answering, they just close their eyes.

Projecting an image of the two of us laughing and happy, frolicking on a beautiful, black-sand beach- remember all the good times. Saying this is it... thanks for the memories. But I just shake my head and cross my arms tighter, refusing to play until my questions are answered, about her and them...

She sighs and stares out the window of the tiny home for the last time looking back at me with the sun shining brightly, then turning toward me when she says, ‘I have already told you, my only recourse, my only way out of the hell making- as I should have, it all karma- and I want what I lost.

And the only way to do that is to relinquish the manifesting, the high life, the big-spending, and all the other extravagances- I have indulged myself in for the last hundred years so I can live the life of an ordinary citizen, too. I understand, honest, hardworking, and humble, with the same day-to-day struggles as anyone else- if not more- go for it.’

Intermission-

Part:

I stared at her, replaying her words in my head, hardly believing what I had just heard. ‘And how exactly are you planning to do that?’ I squint.

‘Seriously. In your one century of living, have you ever even held a real job?’

But even though I am dead sober and not at all joking, she throws her head back and laughs like I was.

Eventually calming down enough to say, ‘You reliably think no one will hire me?’

‘I could have had a job if I wanted to but, back home how- and when could I have- you’re working for a town that thinks your less then they, in every way you could think of, the kids you work with don’t like you and their dad that is now your boss thinks you’re a waste of life; so, get a job- yah-right.’

She shakes her head and laughs even harder. ‘Forever, please. Don’t you think I have been around long enough to have improved a few skills?’

~*~

I start to respond, wanting to explain that while it is truly remarkable to watch her paint, better than Picasso with one hand while at the same time outdoing Van Gogh with the other by cutting... I do not think that will help her land that coveted barista position at the Starbucks on the corner, yet something

about girls well never changes, just like every girl has that one boy that is her bitch, and I get that I had mine and she now has hers... so-o-o!

Nonetheless, before I can say it, she is standing beside me, moving with such speed and grace all I can manage is, 'Well, for someone who's turned her back on her gifts, you still move fast, for a girl that doesn't want to see any more of her past even if it is showing in the painting.'

Aware of that warm wonderful tingle swarming- turning and swimming like within my skin as she slips her arms around my waist and pulls me close to her chest, carefully circumventing skin-on-skin contact, yet it could not be helped.

-And-

'Besides what about telepathy?'

I murmur.

Thinking- Your mind spends about 70% of its time replaying memories and creating scenarios of perfect moments. Waiting- like painting- is linked to depression, at times- and shows within the picture.

Time spent waiting for something that may never happen is mentally painful. The best feeling in the world is knowing that you mean something to someone. This can add years to your life.

Sometimes good people make bad choices. It does not mean they are bad people; it means they are human. Yet we are not human.

Then the talking started up-

‘Are you planning to ditch that too- for your BITCH?’

So, overcome by her juxtaposition, I can barely eke out the words.

‘I’ve no plans to ditch anything that brings me closer to you,’ she says, gaze on mine, steady and still.

‘As for the rest-’ SHE- shrugs, glancing around the large space before finding me again. And ‘tell me, what matters more, NEVER- Ever? The size of my house or house-or the size of my heart?’

I bite my lip and advert my gaze, the truth of her words left leaving me feeling small and ashamed- like first-time sex- when your 13 and can now consent.

I swallow hard, focusing on anything but her, thinking back on my life and all the flashbacks that come.

It is not that I care about her past, I mean, if I want those things then fine, I will just clear them myself. An instant mood changes from happy to sad usually indicates that you are missing someone, I have noticed...

Even so then again even though they are not important- THERE
LIKE- JUST- moments lost in time, if I am going, to be honest, then I must
admit they were part of the preliminary attraction-adding to her sleek, shiny,
mysterious persona, that lured me in right away.

Then when I finally am held at her again, standing before me, stripped
bare of all the usual dazzle and flash, honed down to the very essence of who
SHE is, I realize she is still the same, warm, wonderful girl that she has been all
along.

Which just proves her point even more. None of that other stuff
matters. None of it has anything to do with her soul at all.

I smile, suddenly remembering the one place where we can be
together-safe and secure and protected from harm.

Reaching for her gloved hand as I grasp it in mine, saying, 'Come on,
I want to show you something,' and pulling her along.

At first, I was concerned she would refuse to visit a place that not
only requires a certain amount of magic for entry, but that is nothing but magic
once you arrive.

Formerly just after landing in that vast sweet-smelling field, she wipes the BUTT off her jeans and offers her hand, gazing all around as SHE says, ‘Wow, I don’t think I was ever able to make the portal so-o quickly.’

‘Please, you’re the one who taught me.’

I smile, gazing at the meadow of pulsating flowers and shivering trees, noting how everything here is reduced to its absolute purest form of beauty and energy.

I tilt my head back, closing my eyes against the warm hazy glow that she makes with me within the shimmering mist of the day.

Remembering the last time, I was here, how I danced with a manifest Naddalin in the very same field, delaying the moment when I would have to let go.

~*~

‘So, you’re okay with being here?’ I ask, unsure just how far she bans on magic outspreads. ‘You’re not mad?’ I WANT TO MAKE SURE THAT SHE IS comfortable!

She then shakes her head and takes my hand.

‘I never grow tired of seeing THIS world WITH ITS UNWORLDLY
COLORS AND CREATURES.’

It is a display of loveliness and potential in its unadulterated form.’

We make our way through the pasture, sustained by the grass just
under our feet as our fingers graze the tops of golden wildflowers, that bend and
sway alongside us.

Knowing anything is possible in a wonderful place, anything at all,
including-just maybe-us.

‘I missed the... everything...’

She leers, gazing all around...

‘Not that I reminisce about the last few weeks without it, even still, it
seems like such a long time since we were last here- just like this.’

‘It felt strange coming without you,’ I say, leading her toward a
beautiful Balinese-style bathhouse balanced beside the blue-green tinted stream.

‘Though I did discover a whole other side I cannot wait to show you.
Only later-not now.’

I push the gossamer pink fabric aside and plop onto the soft white cushions, smiling as Naddalin lands right beside me, the two of us lying side by side, gazing up at the decoratively carved coconut beams.

Heads together, the soles of our feet just a few inches shy-the result of my elixir-fueled growth spurt.

‘What is the...?’

She turns onto her side...

‘Why is when having love when you have voices in your head from others lingering in your mind is about the same as having the feeling that you did when your daddy and everyone was in the room looking at you are taking your first poop, and then start applauding for you after the fact of witnessing?’ She spoke.

And then I draw the curtains closer with my mind to me and her. Keen to shut out all those environs she and I, so-o we can enjoy our own private space that is never private.

‘I saw one on the cover of a travel magazine featuring some exotic resort, and I liked it so much I thought I would appear in one. You know, so we could hang out-and-stuff.’

I prevent my gaze, heart racing, face blushing, knowing I am quite possibly the most pathetic seducer she has met in her one hundred years. The world was blazing like fiery tornadoes and the birds in a mass flock like a dark wicked omen of what to come.

Nonetheless, she just giggles, pulling me so close we just nearly touch.

Separated only by the slimmest veil of shimmering energy, a pulsating screen that hovers between us- allowing us to be near without harming each other.

I close my eyes, surrendering to the wave of warmth and tingle as our bodies come together. Two hearts pumping in perfect unison, reaching, and retreating, expanding, and retracting, the tempo perfectly synchronized as though beating as one.

Everything about it feels so good, so natural, so right, I snuggle closer. Nestling my face in the hollow where her shoulder meets her neck, longing to taste her sweet skin and inhale her warm perfumed scent.

A low moan absconding from deep in her throat as I close my eyes and press into her hips, my tongue tipped toward her skin, only to have her spring from my reach so fast I am met with a mouthful of the cushion.

I scrambled upright, seeing her move so quickly she is reduced to a blur. Stopping only when she is safely ensconced on the other side of the curtain, eyes blazing, body trembling, as I beg her to tell me what occurred.

I move near her, wanting to aid them.

But then again, just as I get close, she moves, yet, again handheld before her, observation cautioning me away.

‘Don’t touch me,’ she says. ‘Please, stay right where you are. Do not come any closer.’

‘But-why?’

My voice is hoarse, uneven, hands trembling by my side as if I were feeling my old ways and old life- AS it was when I was getting older- not a young girl any longer.

‘Did I do something where I was mistaken in doing so?’

I just thought-well-since we are here-and since nothing bad can happen-I just thought it would be okay- if we tried to- re-kindle in reconciliations.’

‘Never- Ever, it’s not that-it’s-’ she shakes her head, her eyes darker than I have ever seen them- for being sky blue.

So dark the irises are indistinguishable from the pupils, blending right in. ‘And who says nothing bad can happen here?’ Her tone is so edgy, her gaze so harsh, it is clear she is travelling an exceptionally long way from her usual state of infallible calm.

I swallowed hard and stared at the ground, feeling foolish, ridiculous- to think I was so desperate to be with my girlfriend, I risked taking her life- if I do- if they know- if they...

-And-

‘I just assumed...’

‘I’m sorry.’

My voice fades, knowing very well what happens when one assumes. I do not know what to say.’ Not only do you make an ass out of you and me, but in that case, that very same you just might end up dead for the final time with no more lives given to you.

‘I-I guess that- I did not think it through and then I shake my head, knowing it is completely insufficient considering the life-and-death circumstances we are in.

I mean, if we are not safe here, then where? I pull my shoulders in, wrapping my arms around my waist, trying to make myself smaller, so small I will disappear from her sight.

-And-

Although, I cannot help but wonder precisely what kind of sad thing could happen in a place where magic comes easily, and wounds are healed promptly.

Naddalin looks at me, answering the thought in my head when she says, ‘School contains the possibility of all things. So far, we have only understood something clearly at last, but who is to say there is not a dark side? It is not at all what we think.’

I gaze at her, remembering when I first met Neville and Rayne and how they said something similar. Watching as she manifests a beautifully carved wood bench, then motions for me to sit.

‘Come,’ she nods, urging me toward her as I take a seat at the far end, not wanting to get too close and risk setting her off again.

‘There is something you need to see something you need to register. So please just close your eyes and unblock your brain of any random ideas and

clutter as best you can. Putting yourself open and sensitive to any visions I express. The container you do that?’

I nod...

My eyes shut tight...

I was doing my best to sweep my mind of such thoughts as What is going on I thought and thought more pondering? Is she mad at me- or just mad?

Unquestionably, she is mad at me- I know it!

How could I be so stupid? But how mad is she beyond? Is it possible to change her mind and start over again? My usual paranoid play-list is set on permanent repeat.

But even after clearing it out and waiting for what feels like a reasonable amount of time, all I have gotten so far is a heavy void of dense solid black.

‘I don’t get it,’ I say, opening one eye, and peeking at her.

Nonetheless, she just shakes her head, eyes shut tight, brows merged in concentration, as she endures to focus with all her might.

‘Listen,’ she says at once.

‘And look deep down inside.’

‘Just close your eyes and obtain.’

I take a deep breath and try again, but still, all I get is a foreboding silence and the feeling of black space.

While waiting for-

I am sucked into a black hole, limbs flailing, unable to stop or slow down. Free-falling into the darkness, my horrible high-pitched scream is the only sound.

-And-

Just as I am sure that fall has no end-it stops. The shriek. The fall. It... all.

Everything...

Leaving me to hang there, released, and suspended. Completely alone in a solitary place with no beginning or end.

Lost in the dark and dismal abyss with no trace of light coming in. Abandoned in the infinite void, a lost and lonely world of permanent midnight. The horrifying comprehension slowly dawned on me- this is where I live now.

A hell with no escape...!

-Then-

I try to run, scream, cry for help but it is no use.

I am frozen, paralyzed, unable to speak completely alone for all of infinite.

Expressly held apart from everything I know and love-cut off from everything that exists.

Knowing I've no choice but to surrender as my mind goes blank and my body limps.

There is no use in fighting when no one can save me.

I stay like that, solitary, eternal, a shadowy awareness creeping upon me, tugging from a place just outside of my reach-

'Till-

Pending-

I am tugged out of that hell and into Naddalin's arms, relieved to see her beautiful, anxious face hovering over me.

'I'm so sorry I thought I'd lost you-I thought you'd never come back!' She cries, holding me tight, her voice like a sob in my ear.

I cling to her, body shaking, her art racing, clothes drenched with sweat. Never having felt so isolated before-so disconnected-from everything.

From every-living-thing. Hugging her tighter, unwilling to let go, my mind connected with her, asking why she chose to put me through that.

She pulls away, cupping my face in her hands as her eyes search mine. ‘I am sorry. I was not trying to punish you, or harm you in any way. I only wanted to show you something, something you needed to experience firsthand to understand.’

I nod, not trusting my voice. Still shaken from an experience so awful it felt like the death of my soul.

‘My God!’ Her eyes widened. ‘That is, it! That is exactly what it is. The soul ceases to exist!’

‘I don’t understand,’ I say, voice hoarse, shaky. ‘What was that horrible place?’

She looks away, fingers squeezing mine when she says, ‘The future, the eternal abyss I’d thought was meant only for me that I’d hoped was meant only for me...’ She closes her eyes and shakes her head hard. ‘But now I know better. Now I know that if you are not careful, extremely careful-you will go there too.’

I look at her, starting to speak, but she cuts me off before I can get to the words. ‘The past few days I’ve been getting these flashers-glimpses, really-

of various moments from my past-both distant and near.’ She looks at me, carefully searching my face.

‘But the moment we came here-’ Her gestures around. ‘It started trickling back, slowly at first until it all came surging forth, including the moments I was under Nevaeh’s control.

I was also dismissed from my death. Those few brief seconds after you broke within the circle before you had me drink the antidote, as you know, I was dying. I watched my entire life shoot before me, a hundred years of unchecked vanity, narcissism, selfishness, and greed.

Like a continuous reel of all my accomplishments, every misdeed that I had done-accompanied by the meaning I had-the reasoning and natural effect of my violation of others.

And though there were a few decent acts here and there, the majority, well, amounted to centuries of me focusing on nothing but my self-interest, giving extraordinarily little thought to anything or anyone else. Focusing solely on the physical world to the detriment of my soul. Leaving me no doubt I was right all along, my karma to blame for what we are going through now.’

She shakes her head and meets my gaze with such unflinching honesty I want to reach out and touch her, hold her, tell her it will all be okay. But instead, I stay put, sensing there is more, and it is about to get worse.

‘Then, now of my death, instead of coming here-’ Her voice cracks but she forces herself to continue. ‘I-I went to a place the exact opposite of the.

A place so dark and cold it is more like a home than I wanted it to be or thought it could be. Experiencing the same thing you just did. Solitary, suspended, alone left to stay that way for all eternity.’

She looks at me, wanting me to understand.

‘It was exactly like you felt. It was as though I was isolated, soulless- with no connection to anything or anyone else.’

I stared into her eyes, an ominous chill blanketing my skin, never having seen her so tired, so jaded, so regretful before.

‘Furthermore, now I appreciate the very thing that’s avoided me all these years.’

I stretch my knees to my bosom, shielding myself personally from whatever befalls nearby.

‘Only our physical bodies are immortal. Our souls are most unquestionably not.’

I avert my gaze, unable to look at her, unable to move.

‘The is the prospect you are suffering. The one I have invested you, if, God prevent, anything should appear, that signifies.’

My fingers instinctively fly to my throat, remembering what Nevaeh said about my compromised chakra, my lack of discernment and weakness, wondering if there is some way to guard it.

‘Exactly how can you be assured?’ I watch her as though caught in a dream, some horrible nightmare with no way to avoid it.

‘I propose, there is an immeasurable gamble you are wrong considering this occurred so fast. Accordingly, that was just a temporary state. You know, as I realized you back to life so ready you did not have time to make the trip hereabouts.’

She shakes her head, her gaze meeting mine when she says, ‘tell me, Ever, what did you see when you died? How did you spend those few moments between the time when your soul left your body, and I returned you to life?’

I swallow hard and look away, gazing at the trees, the flowers, the clear stream flowing nearby remembering that day I found myself in the very same field.

So, taken by its heady fragrance, its shimmering mist, the all-encompassing feel of unconditional love, I was tempted to linger forever, never wanting to leave.

‘The idea you did not see the depths is that you were still precarious. You ought to die a mortal’s death.

Notwithstanding, the moment I had you drink from the compound, awarding you eternal season, everything altered. Instead of immortality in School or the place beyond the bridge- suited your predetermination.’

She swings her head and watches endlessly, so strongly mired in her special world of regret I am nervous I will never touch her again.

Simply just as quickly her eyes push mine meanwhile, she answers, ‘We can exist an infinity in the earth sphere, you, and I collectively.

Although if something should result if one of us should die.’

She rocks her head. ‘The depth is where we’ll go, and we’ll nevermore see each other again.’

I start to speak, desperate to refute it, tell her here is wrong, but I cannot. It is of no use. All I must do is look in her eyes to see the truth.

‘And as much as I believe in the powerful heralding magic of the place- just look at the way it heralded my memory-’ she shrugs and shakes her head.

‘I cannot afford to give in, no matter how safe my desire for you may seem. It is too risky. Besides we’ve no impervious it will be any different here than on the earth plane. It is a gamble I cannot afford to take. Not when I need to do everything I can to keep you safe.’

‘Keep me innocuous?’

I gape hard. ‘You are the one who needs saving! It is my fault all the happened in the first place! If I had not.’

‘Always, please,’ she says, voice harsh, willing me to listen.

‘You are in no way to blame. When I think about the way I’ve lived- the things I have done-’ She shakes her head. ‘I deserve nothing better, and if there was any inquiry that my karma was to blame, well, it ends here.

I have spent the better part of hundred years devoting myself to physical pleasure and neglecting my soul-and this is the result-the wake-up call, and inopportunely, I have dragged you along.

So-o makes no mistake, my concern is for you, and you are only. You are my only priority. My life is only important in that I stay well long enough to protect you from them and whoever else might hurt. And that means we can never be together. Never. It is a risk we cannot take.'

I turn toward the stream, a thousand thoughts storming my brain. Besides, even though I heard everything she just said, even though I qualified the gorge for myself, I still would not change what I am.

'And the other orphans?'

I whisper, remembering how I counted seven, including Naddalin at one point. 'What happened to them? Do you know if they turned evil like Lily and Haven?'

'Haven is not evil.'

'So, what is the problem in their thinking with us, they believe... they believe in the stories like they do Santa; and they expect gifts, and when they do not get anything, they pout when they want us to be gifted.'

'Nevaeh that's another question.'

Naddalin shrugs, rising from the bench and pacing before me. 'I always assumed they were too old and feeble by now to ever pose a real threat.'

That is what happens after the first one hundred years-you age- some yet slower than the rest. And the only way to reverse the process is to drink the tonic again if you want an end.

Haven amassed it while we were dating and slipped it to Naddalin who eventually learned how to make her own and then passed it to the other.' She then shakes her head more.

'So that's where Haven is now,' I whimper, overwhelmed with repentance when I realize the truth. No matter how sinful she was, she did not deserve that. Nobody does. 'I sent her here-and-nowhere- furthermore now she's-' I swing my head, unable to terminate.

'It wasn't you who did it, it was me.'

She fills the space beside me, sitting so close there is only a fragment of vitality throbbing separating us.

'The second I made her everlasting; I sealed her fate.'

I was not sure if she wanted it or not, yet it was for the best I conceived and my self-indulgence.

'Just like I did yours.'

I swallow hard, reassured by her warmth along with her wanting to assure me that I am truly not responsible for sending my number-one enemy through all my lives straight into that hell.

‘I’m so sorry,’ she mutters, contemplates full of repentance.

‘I am mournful I involved you in either of them. I should have become left lonely should have stepped a long time ago. You would have done so much better off if you had never met me.’

I shake my head, unwilling to even visit that place, it is far too late for looking back or second-guessing. ‘But if we’re destined to be together then maybe the is our fate.’ Knowing her stays unconvinced the second I read her countenance.

‘Or maybe I’ve forced something that was never meant to be.’ She frowns and looks down. ‘Did you ever think of that?’

I glance away, carrying in the encompassing beauty, apprehending words simply can never- ever modify any of the only actions that can assist; and fortunate for us, I know just where to start.

I stand, pulling her up alongside me as I say, ‘Come on. We do not need Haven- do not need anyone- I do know just the place!’

We head for the Myriad Halls of Learning... Stopping just bashful of its abrupt chalcedony steps as I peer at her, querying (enthusiastic!) she can see what I see the ever-changing façade that is needed for entrance.

‘Consequently, you did find it,’ she tells, speech tinged with reverence as we observe the swirling collection of the most divine and wonderful countries on Earth.

The Great Pyramids of Giza, the Taj Mahal morphing into the Parthenon, which turns into the Lotus temple, which displays and so on.

Our common declaration of its excellence and shock allowed us toward the grand marble hall overlaid with elaborately sculpted columns straight out of ancient Greek times.

Interval: 2 Scared of my Past

Part: 2

The girl that was human trafficking-

Nevaeh had lovely holes, I remember when I had her knees hitting and pushed back onto her shoulders, she was always my girl, what happened to us and the love we had that was like having one soul united?

~Chaiz~

Portion: 1

Nevaeh- Merry Christmas and a wad, blown all over your face. I remember those days... I also remember the windshield of my 57, sounding like a gay fart every time, I would drive down the road past 55 MPH.

I also missed through the times before in fast hast, at all the moment when he flooded me with his chest covering love, the fast-lusting moments of me ripping away, in the need of remembering too yet my wanting to hold him closer, not get- pregnant. nevertheless, and fast fingering my newly opened hole to spray all over his belly as did mine and even hit my face at times in times of pulling out, it was sweet and cute, always, that, always shy, and wonderful.

I remember doing TESA Sperm Aspiration on him long before we were together, I would say when 15 and I was about 14, I never thought that made him less of a man, just to ensure, I would have his baby and she never would. And, to have some of him even if he ended up with one of them, they would never have the gift of what was all mine after that only night, and the rest was up to what if like something would happen to him for loving me.

He never knew and I never told him... that I did this; yet I knew that was the way it had to be, this worked on my mind also. I also remember Alissa Amsel is a blonde hair, blue-eyed girl as I made my way into the afterlife just

for an abbreviated time between life and after, out of spite giving him a vasectomy after my death by her own crazy hands.

In Vitro Fertilization was what I wanted to have twin girls, yet only one lived, and the other was a stillbirth, even in winning you sometimes lose, her name was Joylynn.

Anyway, I remember when I had matching hair braids the whole time, I was extremely pleased to discover that a big bonus of being pregnant was the pregnancy orgasms with a capital O. I endured having various orgasms before being pregnant, but it was never the average.

When I was pregnant, multiple orgasms became regular and expected.

My sex drive was in high gear and my body response was intense. Your body feels radiant and beautiful which appends to your confidence. Kinship is intensified between you and your partner.

My husband was more careful at first (checking that I was okay and if the position suited me as I got further along in the pregnancy), but soon discerned I was very okay and experiencing things a lot.

For me, sex during pregnancy is incredible - like mind-blowing fun and excitement. I feel like a true life-giving, orgasm-having, divinely feminine, sex goddess!

I had no idea pregnant sex and masturbation were so great until I experienced them.

The enhanced orgasms and heightened sensibilities of pregnant sex are a serious consolation prize for the current discomforts that women experience in pregnancy like queasiness, extreme exhaustion, breast tenderness, etc.

So, to all the mamas out there feeling silly or shocked by their bodies' desire to get down while they gestate: If there is no medical reason for holding back, then do yourself (and your partner) a favor and get freaky.'

‘Why is when having love when you have voices in your head from others loitering in your mind is about the same as having the belief that you did when your daddy and everyone was in the room looking at you are taking your first poop, and then start clapping for you after the fact of witnessing?’

They hate everything they do not realize, that is why everything is misunderstood; all their no thoughts and it is all unclear.

Our common acknowledgment of its beauty and wonder allowed us into the grand marble hall lined with elaborately carved columns straight out of ancient Greek times.

~*~

Things I never thought of living in a small town that was the world to me, yet more to them.

Naddalin gazes around, face a mask of absolute wonder as she takes it all in.

‘I haven’t been here since-’

I peered at her, holding my breath, dying to know the details of the last time she was here.

‘Since I came to find you.’

I squint, unsure what that means.

‘Sometimes-’ She looks at me. ‘I was blessed enough to just spring upon you, ending up in the same place at just the right time.

Though often I would have to wait a few times before it was just to meet.’

‘You mean you were spying on me?’ I gape, hoping it was not as creepy as it sounds. ‘When I was a kid?’

She cringes, averting her gaze when she says, ‘No, not spying, Never-Ever. Please. What do you take me for?’ She chuckles and rocks her head. ‘It was more like-keeping tabs.

Patiently waiting until the time was right. Although the last few times when I was unable to find you, no matter how hard I tried-and believe me, I tried, living like a wanderer, itinerant from place to place, sure I had missed you forever- I decided to come here. Furthermore, I went into some friends who showed me the way.'

'Neville and Rayne.' I nod, neither hearing nor seeing the answer in her head, but somehow sensing it is true.

Surmounted by an instantaneous rush of blame for failing to even think of them until now. Not even questioning how they might be, where they might be, until a second ago.

'You know them?' She squinted, surprised.

I squeeze my lips unitedly, comprehending I will have to tell her the rest of the tale, the parts I had hoped to flee.

'They led me here too-' I pause, taking a deep breath and looking away, fancying to take in the place than meet her puzzled gaze. 'They were at Ava's- or at least Rayne was.

Neville was out' I shake my head and start again. 'Sher was out trying to help you when you-'

I close my eyes and sigh, deciding to just show her alternately. Everything. All of it. Including the parts, I was too self-conscious to put into words. Projecting the conclusions of that day until no more secrets are connecting us. Letting her know how hard they fought to save her, while I was too stubborn, refusing to listen.

Nevertheless, alternatively of being conquered as I feared, she places her hands on my shoulders, contemplating at me with indulgence as she deems, what is done is arranged. We must walk ahead, there is no staring backward.

I remember the new laws after the impressions take over that were made to all young women, like me at the age of five in the crunch with the golden dooms. When the vagina was stitched shut and our clitoris must be cut off flush with a razor blade along with inner and outer lips by the hands of our dads, to only feel the love with a marriage, it was the new world orders to a young woman whose values were their vagina.

Then ripping back into the moment, I regain my life, at the present. I walk inside a dark auditorium with sticky floors, worn seats, and the scent of buttery popcorn saturating the air. Narrowing down the aisle and deciding on the best seat in the house, the one midway down and dead center, I prop my feet on the chair simply before me as the lights go faint and a huge tub of popcorn

arrives in my lap. Seeing the red drapes withdraw as the large, brilliant screen forces to flicker and flash in an abundance of concepts that suddenly fly past.

Although instead of the suspension I had anticipated, all I get is a list of clips of films I have already seen. Succeeding in a handmade montage of my family's most amusing times, elevated straight from my old life, and straightening to a soundtrack that only Riley could make.

Portion: 2

Nevaeh- being the wife remember us and the feelings of, I want to keep you up, fuck me until the daylight, he said, 'I taste like candy,' like an open door, he would come inside it over and over, we started at midnight and Go 'til the sunrise.

With Intimate Missionary Fuck 'm in your favorite position with my legs spread, with no shame spraying like a young married woman hard and screaming his name, exposing my pussy and asshole and soles while you stroke your cock for me until you are ready to cum hard!! I do love him to this day. Even if it is hard to show for me.

Then after, me being 4 foot 2 inches or so, then I would step into the shower with him, and he would lay his big dick right on top of my head and tap it on me to show his cute love for me. Means I want to '69' with you.

He would lick in-between what he said was a sweet little line of a pussy in my mid-twenties, ah, and bend his deep tongue down in and get a lick full of my running out cum to shallow the best days of my life.

To have me naked holding me in her arms, and to be held for is the best feeling in the world.

Then again, my mind also drifts to the moments when... even when at that moment, at that time... remembering my 'sped' teachers in class a year or so earlier making the raspberry sound with their tongue flapping out of his lips of his mouth, making that slabbering tone, well doing a hard jacking motion with his hand at where his dick would be as if he were not wearing pants.

I remember my recorder of documents in Phycology as the girl the students (Human Trafficking) to the staff of Oak View Schools and county via (Local Education Agency.)

Special education (also known as special-needs education, aided education, exceptional education, special ed., SEN, or SPED) is the practice of educating students in a way that addresses their differences and special needs.

Ideally, this process involves the individually planned and systematically monitored arrangement of teaching procedures, adapted equipment and materials, and accessible settings.

These interventions are designed to help individuals with special needs achieve a higher level of personal self-sufficiency and success in school and in their community, which may not be available if the student were only given access to typical classroom education.

The Individuals with Disabilities Education Act (IDEA) requires each student with disabilities who receives special education services to have an IEP educational program written just for him or her. Second, IEP helps the school meet your special needs. It also helps you plan educational goals for yourself.

(IEP) and staff- enslaved people like me- Neaveh against their will, either because of the profit or because of a belief that certain people are worthless or because of a system of abuse and crime that they were raised in.

I remember all the exploitation, the action or fact of treating someone unfairly to benefit from their work. You know the fact of making use of a situation to gain an unfair advantage for oneself.

(Beyond cultural practices, the profit, vulnerabilities of certain people groups, lack of human rights, economic instability, and more, traffickers are the ones who choose to exploit people for their gain.)

Traffickers generate a large profit not with sex but all other factors in trafficking kids into programs for pay, teachers like chairs of Special Education

(Local Education Agency) member of at my school, made cases of taking Poverty, into play to Trafficking kids for payments, thus giving kids with lack of education, a lack of education can lead to decreased opportunities for work at a living wage, and it can also lead to a decreased knowledge in rights.

Both outcomes can cause people to be at a greater vulnerability to human trafficking. Kids like me, a victim have vulnerabilities of which traffickers of the past have taken advantage of. (Sex was in my past at any time.)

Lack of human rights for vulnerable groups, Traffickers can prey on these marginalized groups because they lack the protection of law enforcement, their families, and even the society they live in.

Also, when countries lack fundamental laws regarding human rights, traffickers feel as though they can get away with what they are doing more easily.

A lack of human rights laws can also end in punishment for victims if the laws and government do not recognize that human trafficking is the exploitation of other people. The county lacks legitimate economic opportunities when people like the victim of Nevaeh lack legitimate economic opportunities, which can also lead to increased vulnerability of human trafficking that has taken place via past reports.

Groups that are especially vulnerable in this area are migrants without work permits, those who lack education, those who live in rural areas where there are fewer jobs available, as well as certain ethnic groups who may not be able to get jobs due to discrimination.

Social factors and cultural practices, keeping them in the situation through drugs, violent force, threats, and more. forced labor in my case has regressed education, as you know. Safety concerns or economic opportunities town-based law enforcement only for the victim.

Remember that enforcing human rights, helping people access education, and helping to increase economic opportunities for people are just a few ways that we can address causes and help prevent human trafficking for future generations.

‘I SHOULD NOT BE AT THE RECEIVING END OF SOMEONE'S BUTT HOLE, TO TAKE THEIR DIARRA RUNS TO MY FACE, OF SHIT ON ME, I AM NOT A TOILET.’ Said 29-year-old Nevaeh.

I reclined back on my childhood bed, weak to keep feelings of him out of my head. My eyes flutter close as I imagine him right here with me like in nights past, I know it is wrong. His passionate whiff blew beneath my head, previously causing my back to rise off the bed just slightly. God, he has not even

felt me. His right hand begins to caress my soft, hairless skin. I groan slightly as he brushes my already hard, small pink nipples before his hand traces down my side.

'The soft Hands.'

He speaks solely next to my ear, his speech deep and stern. My lips part as I bring my hands together and to him. He grabs my ankles, holding them above my head.

He taps my head twice whilst looking deep into my eyes, his own eyes dark and swirling with a hunger for a child. The view delivers me gulps to let out, and I feel a beat down below.

Then pappy lifts his eyebrows at my insufficiency of acceptance, and I soon respond in reaction to his hushed guidance to keep my legs exactly where they are up and past my ears in the air, yet the same as it was with my husband, and this was always in the back of my mind. No rope, just my arms wrapped around my legs.

Part- 3

My sister left me her teddy bear when she passed on it was the only thing I had and remembered about Naddalin.

It really should have been our teddy bear. Dad won it for both of us at the County Fair when we all were in strollers at one of those rigged balloon popping games. Then presently later the accident... or so it was called.

Who knows how much cash he must have emitted into amusing us as small girls before his death, but he could have purchased the real thing instead of the fuzzy, plush, solely too comfortable teddy bear?

Our dad separated the name became part of the family, a symbolic memory of how our family got through the tragedy.

Technically it was both of ours, but it had to stay in one room this was given to Naddalin.

-And-

While I was visiting some bedtimes, as time went on my dad became less energetic about enforcing the rule about sharing, until even I commenced to think of it as heirs.

I assume we had our regular share of mettle, but I survived in awe of my sister. Like every younger sister even if only like one-minute younger.

I assume we had our regular share of mettle, but I survived in awe of my sister. Like every younger sister even if only like one-minute younger.

I remember- I was always very shy around girls, never knew how to speak to them, and had never asked a girl out. I had just turned around 13 (when this event happened) and was living at home with my parents and my twin sister Lilly.

There had been this clash when I was still in junior high when my sister was a first-year student like me, but I was always there for her as she was for me, where the neighborhood and age difference proved a barrier as did our categories. But once I got to high school, there was a gradual blending of our worlds.

For the past few years, we had been nearly joined, exactly like when we were kids. We played when we could get away in the hayfields together after I would run away, loved the same art teacher, and on some nights when I woke up from a particularly bad night terror, she let me sneak into her bed over her dad's, head nuzzled against her small breasts, comforted by the sound of her breathing...

I remember Buttercup, her sweet white lab that stands behind her always even to this day, as her best friend. Tongue straining toward her nose, licking like mad, trying to get to the chunk of peanut butter she had dabbled there.

I have had night terrors since the occurrence. I cannot say that Lily became like a mom, that would have been too much to ask, but she tried to bridge the gap for me and us even if it when over my head at times. She answered all those embarrassing questions, helped me through those uncomfortable topics and earlier bras, even if my chest never transformed to her stature just like mine.

It was a weekend in the summer and our parents just thought we were in our beds for the night and had gone away for a break from school days, leaving home behind. I had worked most of the weekend, filling lots of my free time laying on my bed masturbating over my thoughts.

I knew it was wrong to have such powerful, poetic, and amatory feelings for my sister, but I did not consider it. I loved her in a way that no relative can legally love her sister. She felt the same way about me. So, whatever occurred I remembered I had to find a way for this to stretch into tomorrow.

I agreed without procrastination. Subsequent brushing my teeth and having a quick shave I climbed into the tub and stood seeing Lily as she soaped her body all over...

Then presented numerous shows of raising individually her two boobs and soaping beneath including then shifting the sponge between her legs and cleaning along her pussy furthermore amid her amazing arose cheeks. Lily's hair was fastened up in a spray on top of her head and, without any makeup, she looked almost innocent.

Lily stretched over and accumulated up the shaving gel and worked it into a lather which she spread over her legs. I had never presumed that watching a girl shaving her legs could be so exciting!

-And-

Like even though it is not at all what I had hoped for, I know it is important all the same. She promised she would find a way to communicate with me, comforting me that just because, I bottled seeing her anymore by my guardian's wishes does not mean she is not still around even if.

Once she had done her legs, then lathered her pubes and her groin. My throat was dry as I watched her shaving around her pussy, clearing away the traces of stubble that had grown over the weekend.

She gazed at me regarding her. 'It needs to be ingested periodically or else it gets itchy,' she said. 'Moreover, I don't want it to be uneven across your

tongue and face.' She grinned broadly as she announced that last minute and I obtained it arduous to swallow, such was my enthusiasm.

She closed and scrubbed away the pieces of the foam and turned off the shower. She leaned back upon the wall and raised one leg onto the edge of the bath, letting the lips of her pussy draw apart, exposing her inner lips.

Her shaved pussy looked sumptuous, and I sunk to my knees in front of her, grabbing the cheeks of her butt and pulling her hips towards me.

I stuck my tongue out as she began to grind her pussy on my face. I tasted her juices springing to drip on my lips, as I grasped her clit into my mouth and engulfed it.

She cried as I examined her with my tongue and licked over her clit. I accelerated blandly against her legs and got her to turn around and lean forward against the glass wall.

She raised her leg again to the side of the bath and I launched my head between her thighs and continued to slurp up and along her pussy lips from behind.

As I worked on the mouth of her love, I could feel my nose press tight against her buttohole. I slowly kissed her along her pussy from her clit to her butt

and, without deliberate purpose, commenced to investigate her wrinkled rosebud like privates with my tongue.

She shook her hips and let out a moan.

'That seems so nice.' I pushed my tongue harder, and her sphincter unwinds, and my tongue probed into her butt.

My finger was brushing across her clit as my tongue was fucking her butt.

-Then-

Her waters were overflowing out of her pussy furthermore I understood it would not be prolonged before she came on my face.

My tongue left her butt and initiated its way back to her clit and I overheard her moan with what seemed like a failure at me ditching her butt.

My tongue left her tight butthole and initiated its way back to her clit and I overheard her moan with what seemed like a failure at me leaving her.

Her moans of regret soon turned to whimpers of satisfaction when I restored my tongue with a finger sliding into the opening of her now relaxed gaping rosey pink and black deep butthole.

I absorbed her clit into my mouth as I examined more mysterious, and more recondite with my finger... ever-so promiscuous with her butt hole with my finger while I was still sucking on her clit.

'Oh yes,' moaned, 'Don't stop! I am going to come. Please do not stop!!!'

I improved the speed of my finger in and out of her butt hole and my tongue was licking over her clit. Quickly, I felt her waters squirt from her pussy including into my mouth and coating over my face.

Her hips were swaying back and forth, pressing my finger more profoundly into her rectum. 'Oh God, I am, coming! That is so-o good!'

Lily was pounding her butt hole onto my finger as she came all over my face, her sphincter was contracting tightly onto my finger as if she were draining it. The feel of her sweaty, perfumed juices coating my mouth and lips was spiritual.

Then ultimately dwindled and waggled her butt hole off my finger and her body was shaking with tremors that still surged through her.

'Oh my God, that was wondrous,' she sniffled. She transformed into me, and we kissed deeply, running our hands, fingers, and palms over each other's bodies.

We embraced each other tightly for a while and I could feel her heart beating like a drum through her chest. Something that I longed to remember.

She shifted away from me, rose out of the tub, and held a towel up to her chest, bequeathing her lush behind bare as for me to stare at... 'Come with me - let us go to my room,' she replied. Furthermore, unfastening the door, I immediately got out of the tub and grabbed my towel, and watched her.

I could not help but stare at her butt hole, watching those wonderful buttocks oscillating and wiggling as she walked.

Lily glimpsed back over her shoulder and giggled. 'Do you like what you see?' She answered. 'Don't you get tired of gazing at my butt?'

'Never!' I answered. 'How could I ever grow bored of seeing your butt hole? I love watching every part of you. Your body is the most beautiful there too.'

Lily smiled several times and shook her a bit.

As she entered her bedroom, she dropped her towel and leaned forward so her butt was sticking out and I could see the outline of her pussy gushing out between her legs. She turned her head to look at me and, seeing my bulging eyes and hungry mouth, she laughed. 'You like it, don't you?' She speaks. 'It makes me so excited to see you looking at me like that!'

Lily stood up and walked over to me, draped her arms over my shoulders, and rubbed her breasts against my chest. She tilted her head forward and began to kiss me hard on the lips, probing her tongue deep into my mouth as she sucked my lips.

Pulling away, she pushed me so that I lay down on her bed with my feet on the floor. She knelt in front of me and grabbed my swollen cock and kissed my head, licking her tongue all over it to suck out the pre-cum that was already oozing out.

I was happy with this as it meant I could spend an evening doing what I loved (surfing the net watching porn) at home alone with no chance of getting caught. Since I was going to be alone all night, I stayed downstairs rather than going to my room. I had recently found an adult site where you could go on camera with other people and get naked and jerk off. As you never had to show your face, it was perfect for someone as shy as me and I found it to be a huge turn to have people looking at me as I played slowly with my cock while chatting with the people watching. I had been on the site chatting with a few people for a while with my camera focused on my shorts.

We were nothing alike, a constant source of anguish for an introvert like me. Madison was like my girlfriend for 3 weeks before the sisters got to her

anyway, she was blonde, I had darker chestnut hair. We were both pretty but in a separate way. Or I was cute, and she was hot.

She laughed with pleasure, moved in front of me, and kissed me.

We left the house and took the bus. We would have to change again along the route to get to our destination. The journey would take about an hour. We sat as close as possible, our thighs in remarkably close contact while avoiding any overt displays of affection until we were a safe distance from our neighborhood. Once we changed buses, we felt more away from prying eyes so we could hold hands and behave more affectionately.

She had a flamboyant, flirtatious personality as I was the dark, brooding artist, more interested in my sketchbook than boys. She belonged to the prom queen or the chief cheerleader, although both postures were below her. I was more of the shy, cool girl in the comic bookstore, the mythical one who loves artwork.

I did not know what I was going to do without my sister. All my friends had been inherited, and there was this gnawing fear that my popularity would decline without it.

-And-

That I would not do anything to stop it.

Of course, I had more difficulty with the course of his move. It made me cry a few times (an easy thing to do), remembering too much of the day we went through all of Mom's stuff, deciding what to keep and what to throw away. I remember thinking identical thoughts on every object, from the old torn and stained script from that first-year student room to those Taco Bell commercials.

Stupid, I know, but everything they made me throw away made me feel like it was another part of her that I would forget. It was the same with mom. Each of those things came imbued with a memory, and yes, I could just hang on to that time we stole a box of advertising brochures and built them into a paper house while Martin frantically searched for them.

But what if I did?

What if I forget that Madison, a major English newspaper, shot *The Grapes of Wrath*? How did I notice the spelling error just before the fifth period when it was too late to do anything? What if I forgot that seedy-looking trapper she wore to class those days she bothered to bring so many pencils?

There were a lot of patient arguments (okay, tantrums) as we were deciding what to pack, what to keep, and what to throw away.

Ok, so I did not take it well.

I inherited enough nonsense to be an open door to a hoarding documentary, but the big booty was her old computer now that she had a new laptop to take with her to college.

And of course, Ted Danzon, who started serving as a pillow/substitute sister.

I would sleep on his oversized chest, wrapping his heavy arms around me, noticing that he still smelled like her...

The school had been the hardest, it was a place I had only known through Madison, my longing through the high school maze. Feeling alone and isolated, I withdrew a lot early in my senior year, fueling my depression. I had this thought, the idea that mom's death had been harder on everyone because daddy and Madison had to take care of me.

I was wallowing.

It was a month before I used the computer to complete district testing registration. But once I was done, I started clicking casually, finding a treasure trove of memories. There were pictures of all of us, different plays, and short stories I had written, memes and jokes inside, enough virtual nostalgia claptrap to keep me satisfied for weeks...

I do not even know what something was labeled. Madison tended to name her files according to the feeling she currently wanted to express. So, the documents titled Fuck Me or Ms. M Takes It Up the Ass were old homework. But I was doing extensive research, truly delving into the depths of self-pity when I first saw...

Madison leaned against the gigantic teddy bear, her legs and ass exposed in it. tight black volleyball shorts. But there was no sports bra or uniform on her bareback. It was almost tasteful, like a 1950s cheesecake a woman might send to her soldier.

Still, my eyes lingered on the bulge of her breasts, her nipples hidden by Ted's fur.

I gave him a knowing look, then let out a laugh.

I knew my sister was having sex. Telling me the details as part of the deal in exchange for my blanket with Dad. But it was new. But from the timestamp on the webcam, I could not match the photo with an ex-boyfriend.

Did she just do this for fun?

There were dozens of other photos and videos in the innocently titled file. For days, I blocked my curiosity, trying to respect her privacy even as these

rationalizations crept into my head. We showered together in the team. I had seen her naked and I knew all about the three men she had fucked.

But it became an obsession. Most of all, I remembered the look on her face, how much fun she was enjoying in this private display of exhibitionism.

It was so much for her.

And yet I was not entirely thinking about his face. I tried to rationalize it even as I squirmed in my seat, trying to pretend my pussy was not responding to these incestuous thoughts.

I promised not to snoop around, so I started drawing, trying to recreate the idyllic image, needing to capture how beautiful it was with my pencil.

And that is where it started...

I decided to watch again, just for reference, forcing myself not to think about the stinging humidity under my waist.

More than a few times during the week, I had resorted to rubbing my pussy against my favorite blanket. I know this sounds like a silly way to masturbate. Madison even bought me a vibrator; I just was not ready to use it.

I walked in, content to let the desire grow and develop until I let it out, rubbing my thighs together against my Mickey Mouse blanket. There was something about it, the texture, the release after waiting for weeks. But often it upset me emotionally and I started to cry.

Once Madison heard me, rushed into the bedroom to check on me. I was only wearing a T-shirt; afraid she would know what I had just done. And with the orgasm still not subsidized yet and my tears flowing, my sister held me back, cuddling me until I calm down.

...And then...

It embarrassed me how I remembered it rather than what happened. I tried to tell myself it was natural. That I was too inexperienced because I could not deny the truth.

It had been the best sex of my life.

Is masturbation sex? Not technically, but emotionally? Mentally?

I like to think that sexual expression is still special when it happens on its own. Masturbation can be self-love instead of self-hate if it is not always seen as a substandard substitute. I was just eighteen, but I had been happy to take my time with myself, perpetually petrified of feeling silly at the end of yet another climax.

Until now, I thought I was looking for that vibrator Madison bought me, stopped only by the thought of what she would think of her sister fucking herself for the first time in her naughty photos. So, I imposed my feelings, rationalizing them, focusing on creating each line exactly like the pixelated vision on the screen.

I finished by lifting my drawing to see the two images of my sister with her teddy bear.

She looked perfect.

I should have stopped then. All I can say is I paused, desperately trying to stop before I clicked through the rest of the gallery.

I saw her spin around, her nipples hard and swollen, one hand playfully twisting them, the other moving down into her black butt. The camera roll burst out, creating these animated GIF presentations of my sister gently pulling down, hiding her pussy as her tits and hair bounced.

Then she put her hands on her hips.

My eyes went straight to her bare vagina, just like her striptease wanted.

Of course, I had seen her naked, but not like this, so overtly sexual in the first of a dozen frontal photos. And Madison was beaming, almost dizzy with a natural smile.

I had not touched myself, yet, but I could feel the fabric of my underwear against my pussy as I compulsively opened and closed my legs. It was not just a little damp anymore now, my panties were soaking wet, clinging to my pussy as I tried to hide the little tingle of pleasure, I was having by moving just a little against the bear's leg. plush.

I could see Madison between her legs, spreading her thighs and using two fingers to open her lips like a professional. I gasped, really seeing inside my sister in a dozen more close-ups, then the camera pulled back to a different position.

This time I saw my sister in a remarkably similar position to what I was doing, only facing the opposite direction. Her legs were spread between our teddy bear's thigh, her arms wrapped around Ted's shoulders as if she were sitting naked in her boyfriend's lap.

Then the photos turned into another animation, showing my sister crushing her pussy and landing on the teddy bear's thigh. Her butt clenched, her

head tilted back, facing the camera, an expression of pure ecstasy on her face as she trembled on the plush.

Was I watching her cum?

When I confessed to her that I rubbed my blanket between my legs, so afraid of looking stupid, she reassured me that I was normal.

Madison said she first used a stuffed animal... to just like me.

At the time, I was too embarrassed to think about it. She was a help to me more than I remember until now, I had forgotten her to this point, and now it is back in my mind that she was a friend of mine, if not more than that, yet I was brainwashed to forget her love.

I looked away from my sister's naked body, absolutely shining on the screen, before realizing how much I was rocking on Teddy, the one that is on the cover of all my books of life in my stories of Sh-h. His fur seemed to stand on end in the right way, his skin had exactly the right texture against my skin... I thought about it, again for a moment.

My panties never got down my ankles as I moved my leg up and down to a person's waist. I twisted and turned, using my hands to hold him still as I slid up and down, too excited to care about the utter humiliation if I was discovered in that position. The computer continued to play the animation, me

mimicking my sister upside down, rubbing as her naked body tickled me over and over in my few moments of concentration.

Our teddy bear felt so good against my clit.

I adjusted, removing my panties and shirt so that I could imitate my sister, fully naked and intimate with our teddy bear. Then I sat down against him, adjusting to the perfect position. I held his leg a bit with my hands, leaning a bit for leverage as I spun, using my muscular thighs to squeeze myself around him as I pulled back.

I craned my neck, struggling both to see and soothe my aching pussy. I could feel the tingling rise in my pelvis, the early beginnings of climax unleashing warm white warning flashes as I reached my final, only stopping long enough to watch Madison one last time.

God, she was so beautiful. And Teddy will be with me in my arms forever; he holds all my past, as a loving friend... that understands my dark past and good times alike.

I convulsed, almost falling out of Ted as the most powerful orgasm in life overpowered my inexperienced cock. I was shaking and struggling so suddenly that the only thing holding me in place was my desperate desire for more. The last waves of ecstasy slowed me down, turning me into a heap of

melted contentment ...curdled instantly in remorse and loneliness. I cried, starting even before the end of my orgasm, pouring out a hideous mixture of tears and mucus in Ted Danson, his plush arms tied around me. I hugged him tightly, letting him cuddle me, trying again to smell my sister on the fresh musk of sex.

It was enough to think of her, holding me after hysterical crying... what to soothe me to sleep.

I cannot know what I was dreaming about and what I just wish I had imagined this vividly, but I had this image of Madison lying naked next to me.

Stroke my hair... Understand how I felt for her.

No tie on our schoolchild uniforms. The ultimate test of submission. I watch her lips turn into a smirk. She controls my body so much and he loves it. I love this.

She gets up from my bed. Her eyes absorb my body. The rise and fall of my chest, my jagged, almost audible breath, the way my hips cannot help but rise with the slightest movement. I watch her carefully and she kneels on the edge of the bed. She taps my ankles and I eagerly spread his legs. She lifts my right leg and kisses me along my foot, her eyes pierce mine. I cannot look away. She lets go of my leg, puts it back on the bed, my soul on the mattress. She

repeats with the other leg. My God, I am already soaked for her. She runs his hands over my smooth shins, over my knees, down to my thighs.

Part: 3

Cast one's Mind Back to

I just remembered what happened to me to regress me down at times... like a brick to the forehead knocking you out it woke me up.

'Yes, Pappy. I remember saying deep in my mind of thoughts.

I close my eyes. Suddenly she slaps the inside of my thighs. I gasp, my eyes open.

'Eyes on me.' The tone of his voice warned me. My only warning.

The skin at the point of impact stings deliciously as I whisper 'Yes,' My pappy hands roam the inside of my thighs, gently massaging where they are now slightly pink.

'Yes what?' she asks, as he positions his body between my legs, her head lowering where I need him most.

The next night I remember the day past of my breathing quickening with anticipation.

'Yes, Pappy.

I moan. I bite my lip as he smiles. He looks down at my painful little pussy. My toes are already curling. 'Oh, my God...' I look at her and moan softly as he places small kisses along her side. Along the inside of my thighs. Along the lips of my bald pussy. I swallow as he spreads my legs wider. I feel his breath against my clit. I fucking need him. I cannot help but lift my hips, bringing my pussy to her face. A nasty smile appears on his lips as he pulls his head away. I moan as he shakes his head. He appreciates it very much. But, God, me too.

He kisses my belly, breasts, neck, and jaw. I moan his name. Her lips finally find mine and it takes all my strength to keep my hands where they are. My back arches to meet his body, wanting to feel him close to me. He suddenly rubs against my bare pussy; I throw my head back as I gasp in pleasure. Damn, if only he did not have those boxers. He buries his face in my neck, inhaling me as he continues to squeak. My breathing became stronger against his ears.

'Please... baby...' I moan breathlessly. He stops. Then I feel his teeth against my neck. I moan loudly. My hands break and find his back, my fingernails dig in as his teeth dig into my skin. I moan aloud to him, 'Fuck...' He licks my neck to soothe his mark.

He moves his mouth to my ear, and I hold on to my teddy- that knows all that happened, 'Oh. When did I say you can move your hands?' I moan as I begin to plead with him.

Suddenly I rolled over onto my stomach and lifted to stay on all fours. He stands behind me. What the fuck did I do - My thoughts are interrupted as I collapse forward in surprise at the first spanking, the sound crackles in the air.

'Come back.' He orders. I quickly resumed the position on all fours. Of them. Three. Four. Five. Six. Seven eight. New. I grin as his hand touches my ass-tingling pink cheek for the tenth and final time. My skin is on fire as he gently massages my cheek. Place a little kiss there. My breathing is irregular as he rolls over onto my back. He strokes the side of my face, pushing my hair behind my ears.

He traces his thumb along my lips as he whispers, 'Good girl.' I moan for him, my whole body on fire. Need him more than ever. He starts again along my body, separating my legs with his hands. I can feel my juices flowing as I bite my lip. I know he sees it as he reaches for my soaking wet pussy. He is laughing.

'Such a nice girl. Look how wet you are.' He takes his finger and runs it to my smooth slit. He brings his finger towards me, and I open my mouth

immediately. He puts his finger in it and I close my mouth, sucking on it. My tongue swirls as I moan to my liking. I watch his jaw tighten at the sensation. He takes her out and goes back down to her. I watch him, watching for his next move. He licks slowly with his face full of his tongue between my folds, finding my clit and sucking it. My hand immediately found her hair as I tangled my fingers in it, my eyes narrowing as my back arched off the bed. I moan as he moans against her, sending vibrations all over my body.

Suddenly, his tongue rushes into me. He kisses my pussy with his tongue as my hands grip the sheets. 'Shit!' I grind my hips to the beat as he fucks my pussy. My foot resting on his back between his shoulder blades. I moaned at the sudden loss of her tongue from inside me, but it was quickly replaced by two of her fingers, her tongue returning to my pulsating little clit. I moan loudly as my hands reach my breasts, kneading them as he pumps his fingers in and out of my pussy. Inside and outside. Inside and outside. Her tongue works my clit so skillfully. My toes are starting to curl, and I can feel that familiar sensation rise in the pit of my stomach.

'Damn baby!' I moan breathlessly. A hand comes back to her hair as I pull it lightly, her fingers working faster and faster. Inside and outside. Inside and outside. 'Oh my God I'm going to cum pappy!' I screamed as he wanted me to say. 'Don't stop, fuck don't stop...' I moan as my legs start to shake.

Suddenly he curls his fingers inside me, hitting that spot that drives me completely insane as he sucks my clit.

My body explodes into its first orgasm. I scream her name as my back lifts off the bed, my body shaking and convulsing under her spell. My legs start to try to close, the sensitivity of my pussy almost unbearable as he continues his beautiful assault on her, his hands spreading my legs, his fingers digging into my thighs. Hunger.

'Baby... damn!' I cry out as my back lifts off the bed again, my hand bumping against the mattress, gripping the sheets as my knuckles turn white. His fingers pull back from my gushing pussy as I moan for him. His tongue licks my sensitive pussy, almost calming her. My body spasms as it rubs against my clit.

'Shit.' I whisper. He is completely pulling himself out of my pussy now, not before shamelessly slapping her. Make my back arched again. I watch him lick his lips with a broad smirk playing on it. I moan, a small smile playing on mine as well. Out of print.

I open my heavy eyes. My fingers are soaked. I sigh and laugh to myself. He did not even touch me.

I am so nervous that I can hardly think clearly. All the other friends of mine have gone further than that, at yet they were much older than I am quite

sure I am the only non-virgin in my school at the age I was then the trigger in my memories of not any less than 8 and more than 4 sold as a slave to my granddad allowed by the county I was in and by the school hush up for money and shaming me for life. '

Concentrate on your homework!' It was the order of all the adults in my life. I broke down from the second year, a full drive to a prestigious college did not allow for much distraction. It meant I was on my way to being a valedictorian, I did not have much of a social life. A few study groups friends, people I talked to in my extracurricular activities but did not think there was anything else for me.

That is until I take my sex education class. I was there the day of Ms. Higgs's lesson. It is a little embarrassing, but it was the first woman I had ever seen naked.

My parents pay a lot for the ultimate purity filters on every device in the house. But there, that day, I learned my real obsession, I love breasts.

The way Ms. Higgs's breasts swayed in the air as she danced for class, the way they bounced up and down as she straddled me in middle school, the way they flew as she was then pounded by Mr. Coach of Ellis Lynam of the middle-grade football team.

I was like everyone else that day, one hand in my pants until I messed up my pants. Unlike everyone else, I did not have anyone to go with later. I still use these memories to go down, the bounce of those breasts was hypnotic. But I wish they had been bigger.

Ava, I had become obsessed with Lily and me and would not stop looking at our breasts, the smaller girls were the better ones, but desperate for women. Still, some of the guys decided to help me, keep her off me and her. That is how I got here, behind the gymnasium bleachers with Lily one time.

Ava wanted a new car, and she knew how to get it, she was 14 and gorgeous, yet I was given mine a year later, and now I understand why even Hope had a heart for my past, she felt bad or something. Ava was just like me, in every way and now I forgave her. I even had my days when Ava and I liked, liked each other, yet that ended fast, over I liked Lily more.

In Ava's teens, I remember her big smiling brown hair, you just wanted to watch, an hourglass figure and breasts. She would date you for fifty dollars, a hundred dollars and you could feel her standing, two hundred had her topless, five hundred and she would have sex. Rumor had it that for a thousand she would let you cum inside. I only had two hundred. It was all we knew how to do.

I remember the times I was into letting Ava get her way...

Her voice is a mixture of sarcasm and boredom as she leans against one of the metal brackets, her shirt completely unbuttoned and her bra on the floor.

I mean something sexy, being the suave type of thug and getting her sucked into me. Instead, my voice cracks when I ask, 'How tall are they?'

'Oh shit, are you one of those? Here, I thought I was with her, there could be a stimulating little conversation. Instead, are you just going about cup sizes? Anything or am I going to stay here and catch a cold while you jerk off to my bra size? '

It was hard to move, just the sight of those amazing breasts made me so hard. Pale, perfectly rounded, creamy bell-shaped breasts that appeared to be more than what could fit in each hand. The areola on each was perfectly round and just maybe two shades darker than the rest of her skin, topped with just the smaller pink nipples. I walked slowly, finally close enough to smell her rose scent. My hands started to lift slowly.

'We don't have all day!' she said angrily and grabbed my wrists and pushed my hands to her chest. The warmth of those breasts in my hands

contrasted directly with her icy demeanor. 'See! Just breasts. Feel them, squeeze them, pinch my nipples, jerk off and step outside.'

I stuck my fingers in, surprised by their flexibility despite their firmness and cheerfulness. Her skin moved between my fingers as I squeezed it, then quickly returned to its shape as I let go.

My thumbs lightly rubbed her nipples as I continued to grope her breasts and I was rewarded with a slight moan as they hardened. I looked her in the eye, just stroking her breasts and stroking her tiny nipples.

The tough girl was leaving, replaced by a girl who enjoyed what I was doing. I leaned in and gave her a soft kiss on the mouth, my first kiss.

Before I could walk away, I felt his hand on the back of my head holding me back and his tongue pierced my lips to claim my mouth. I grabbed her harder, kneading each breast in my hand but making sure to keep rubbing her erect nipples.

She tilted her head back, breaking our kiss 'Suck my nipples.' she said breathlessly. I looked down at his still cupped chest in my hands, the creamy flesh now speckled with pale and crimson from which my fingers had left marks in my eagerness.

She must have enjoyed everything I had done because she had her right hand on the waistband of her skirt. I lifted her right breast as far as possible, causing her to cry out as I stretched her out, lowering my head to that alluring nipple, wanting to taste and suck on the first breast of my adult life.

'WHAT ARE YOU DOING!'

Ava and I both jumped as Ms. Barnard screamed asking us questions. She knew at 1st grade in her reports we had known academic parental, she was the oldest teacher here and called us both brain dead in class, a withered old woman who had scared death by leaving her life forever.

Ava tried to cover up, but nobody could button a shirt that fast, besides how would you explain her bra on the floor anyway?

Ms. Barnard waited until I was decent, well enough decent as her nipples could be seen digging into her shirt as she was now without a bra, and we were shown to the principal's office.

Dr. LORENZO was the principal and first caretaker of Lily; she was a beautiful take on femininity itself. A tall, supple woman with her blonde hair still in a bun on her head. She was flat so had never really been a part of my fantasies, but I did know some of the guys loved her legs. She had a stern expression as Ms. Barnard explained the situation.

I cannot even believe it! The best and brightest in our school and the cheap whore, both in my office. What were you thinking?

I was stuck looking for an answer when Ava said, 'I thought I liked getting my breasts massaged and going to get my nipples sucked. Things are always erect and need attention to say nothing of what is going on. in my... '

'That's enough girl.' Said, Principal LORENZO, although there seemed to be a lump in her throat and the way she looked Ava had changed in a way that I cannot describe.

'And the best part of this is with Ava and I, like, I think that I had forgotten at times that at one point I wanted her love, and she forgot that I didn't want it back when I could not remember.'

Taking his attention away from Ava, LORENZO gave me a dirty look: 'Since this is your first offense here, for now I'll do without punishment the start of what would be lots of unforeseen punishments.' However, you must report to the school counselor at the end of the day. I will not have our best and brightest stumbling across the finish line.

'You're fired.'

I got up quickly and left the office. The door closed behind me, and I was so nervous and relieved that I had to lean against the door and catch my breath.

'What am I supposed to do with a bad girl like you?' I heard the manager ask.

'Anything you want, head of household.' Was Ava's shocking reply.

I wanted so much to listen but had enough problems already, so I did my best to wish the curtain in my pants would go away and set off for my next class.

The rest of the day was confusing. I had been further away than ever with a woman, being able to feel her warm breasts in my hands, I could not focus on anything else. I am just drifting from class to class, my erection comes and goes like the tide. When the last bell rang, I was so distracted that I hardly heard it, I had planned to go to the bathroom and take matters into my own hands, but then I heard the school secretary come to the AP and call me to the counselor. It reminded me of Ms. LORENZO and Ava, and my erection had returned to full strength as I imagined all the way our strict principle could have governed Ava.

So, I found myself in the spacious office of our guidance counselor, I had not met her before as she had just replaced the previous one last month. The nameplate on his large solid oak desk said, Ms. Sana Herbert. The rest of the office was remarkably clutter-free except for a single laptop. The room had no windows, lit only by fluorescent lights from the ceiling.

A single potted plant above the filing cabinet in the left corner of the room provided only natural color. I took the only other seat next to the one behind the desk.

The chair was large, closer to the size of a loveseat. I tried to focus on what to expect, but I could not stop thinking about how Ava's nipples were hardening under my thumbs. 'Thanks, I have to say repeatedly to your call, I'll do my best.'

I hear a melody behind the door, it is light and lively with the slightest emphasis.

'Nevaeh...?'

Listen to me? That melodious voice has finally stopped all my fantasies. I finally saw his face. Yes, he had a bit of a double chin, but his pale skin with its light layer of freckles was framed by what I thought. Her natural hair made me take a breath in my throat. There was a natural beauty in this

woman, like the mother earth of myth, a symbol of rich fertility. These elders were interested in something with their sculptures of great women.

'I'm sorry, can you repeat the question?'

'What made you think that being with this girl was an innovative idea?'

I looked down at the carpet, not just out of embarrassment, but because it was hard to think clearly when I looked. 'I didn't think it was an innovative idea, it was just... well... my only option.'

'How could he pay to touch a girl's breasts to have been your only option? You are an incredibly intelligent young man, safe there was something else... '

'Yes, because people really care! Do you know how much you must sacrifice to be smart? I have no friends, I can talk to people enough to complete a project, but otherwise there is no time for anything else! I can barely talk to other guys, let alone girls. 'I blurted out.

'Oh, well, that means it was... I mean... uh.'

'Yes, I am a virgin,' said Lily, along with the only one in this school.'

She tapped her fingers on the top of his desk as my confession floated in the air. Yes, it was pathetic. 'Here I am, the biggest loser in the world.'

'Nevaeh, can you look at me?

'The black-eyed children in white dresses are hunting me again.' she said back in a whisper.

(I remembered as I went back into time)

My eyes lifted off the floor, went back to her desk, but stopped when I saw her still fully covered breasts resting on the desk.

Sitting had forced her stomach and even though her pink blouse showed no cleavage, heavy breasts were perfectly shaped for me. How could anyone walk with these things? Why would you leave the house? Give me that pair of boots and I will be in bed all day every day. My erection came back as I watched the lady.

'I am starting to understand your problem. My eyes are there. he said softly. I looked embarrassed into those deep green eyes, as fascinating as her breasts. Her gaze broke with mine as she looked down and an embarrassed smile crossed her face. I followed his eyes and noticed that a black spot had formed on the front of my persimmons.

I covered up as fast as possible, I could feel my cheeks burn as she giggled softly. 'I am sorry! I do not know how...'

'It is okay Nevaeh. The body is a natural thing, there is no need to be ashamed. I have never let anyone enjoy my sight.'

'What?'

'You know come on, orgasm. I usually must work a little harder for this.' She said with a laugh.

'But I did not! This is just a bias I swear!'

'Prove it.' She said, her voice going to a lower register that made my balls tingle.

I hesitated for just a moment, then I got up, quickly unfastened my belt, and opened my legs. I pushed them and my skirt down, letting it show it was so wet that he glistened in the fluorescent light but swayed proudly in front of me. I looked at her and those eyes were fascinated by my sight.

'All this and you never did this like this? It is a shame. You must rub off to something crazy.' She said and then her pink tongue ran around her ruby red lips. been hard all day. 'I just nodded yes.

'Well, I am not a nurse, but it cannot be healthy. So why not sit in that chair and stroke it for me? We will take care of all of you and then you can think again. That is, it, sit down, make yourself comfortable. Now grab it and stroke it up and down, not too fast! Only languid movements. There is no need to rush.

I threw off my shirt, so I was completely naked then tried my best to follow her instructions but being told how to touch myself by this vision of a girl made it difficult to respect.

It was so nice to watch her as I ran my hand along with myself, forcing more clear liquid from my pussy to wet my hand, then back in.

She moved her hand up and down in time with mine, demonstrating the pace he wanted. Her face turned red as he watched me cling to her every word.

I doubted she had ever done this before, either that or she just enjoyed watching a twenty-one-year-old girl masturbate that is my teacher.

'That's it, keep pumping that soft pussy. Now take your free hand and play with the top parts. Those lips look so big and full of cum. Just massage them. Do not be shy.'

I am not shy... you are the one behind the desk with all your clothes on.' I said with a confident and typically arrogant or aggressive gait or manner that I did not hear.

'That's right.' she said and opened a drawer on the side of the desk and put away the laptop and the nameplate.

Then she got up and quickly took off her red blouse.

I was in awe when those giant breasts were finally exposed to me.

Since I had not seen her nipples slip into her shirt, I thought she was wearing a bra, but as she lifted her blouse her chest moved with it and her boobs gloriously fell out of their fabric prison to bounce against her stomach and sway freely, I understood that I was wrong.

She spoke and licked her cum from between my breasts. I already started stroking again. She smiled at me as soon as she finished cleaning.

Then she put her hands to her waist and undid her skirt in the same way I undid mine. She slipped it off and stood in front of me in all her natural glory. She said I am done already being his wife. I want to play and remember what it is like to be a kid.

I tried to see if her pussy hair was pink on the inside too, there was so much of that luscious belly on display, creamy skin. She leaned back on the

desk, making it creak, and you started to simply rub her stomach and breasts, enjoying all her flesh as much as I was in her sight.

'Come here.' She speaks. I was up and down from her in an instant. 'Do you like everything you see? Do you like watching a big girl play with her breasts and belly? Am I making your virgin pussy hard again? '

'I am not a virgin.' Said Nevaeh.

'Really?'

She has lots of freckles on her face that extended down her neck and even darkened at the top of her neckline. Flecks of golden orange ran down her milky white skin before disappearing just before the redness of her areolas and small flat nipples.

Her right breast was also about an inch longer than mine and looked fuller than mine, although enormous to me looking at my size yet who would have complained.

She walked around the desk to lean against it, her eyes fixed on mine, his right hand still pointing at my step.

Do you want to stare at these fat breasts and just rub them off? That girl you were with seems flat compared to these.' 'How...' I barely stammered as

she started shaking them, making them move back and forth like the wave of a twilight tide.

'How significant? Does that make you more arduous, a little girl obsessed with my breasts?

Well, they are not the same size, but I am around 40M and still growing. Doctors call it macromastia, I call it a boob lover's dream. They are so huge and full. I bet you want to come everywhere. To let you go and jump as hard as you can. Think you have enough to dress up these giant boobs? Go ahead and get up, move over here, and see how much you have. I love licking a man's salty cum off my breasts. '

My hand was blurred as I managed to get up. With her dirty talk and those huge boobs, I knew I was not going to last long. As I approached her, she leaned forward, letting those two pieces of breast meat hang in the air. I cannot even see the rest of her, just those giant breasts.

'That's it, faster baby! I want that cum! I demand that prominent load on these boobs, can you give me what I need Nevaeh? Can you give me that cum please?'

I felt that load rise from my toes.

I was grunting like an animal, and she started this excited laugh as the first trickle of cum shot from me and splashed against her left breast.

I have never been this much before.

Six or seven hard hits before others started poking out of the climax. She reached out and grabbed my pussy, pulled me closer, and massaged my pussy head into the soft warmth of her breasts, making sure not to miss a drop.

'What a good girl. Now sit back down. I do not need you to get stunned now. 'She announced as she stood up to her full height. I did as I was told and then watched in wonder as she lifted her right breast and began licking me cum off her tit. My pussy had not completely settled when watching her eat me cum made me aroused again.

She noticed it and smiled: 'Principal LORENZO says I must do whatever it takes to make sure her main schoolchild does not hesitate.

Well, if you are distracted by that development in class, you could be left behind, so that is our thing you keep hushed to all.

I want you here an hour before your class starts and for at least an hour after school and this is what we can do in a hush. I will make sure you have a clear idea for your lessons.'

'Okay!'

Yes, Miss. Stackawitz.' I said mesmerized her body moved as her hands kneaded her breasts or shook her belly.

'I think a woman who just came on my boobs can call me by name.'

She laughed. 'Tell me what you want.'

'Before you go...Nevaeh, I need to know that I want... I want... fuck you even if all those kids you think you need to like do not! Oh, I am sorry, I should not... say this. 'She reached out, bringing a finger to my lips, and silenced me.

When I finally stopped trying to speak, she folded her finger under my chin and guided me closer, then pulled me into her warm body.

Her lips found mine and the second kiss of my life was even better than the first.

Not that I knew what I was doing, but she did. Her hands lift my arms and lift them so that I would hug her just like she hugged me.

Her tongue pierced my lips and ran his nails lightly up and down my back.

My pussy was now back to its full strength, and I loved the way it finally felt pressed against his warm body.

I pressed against her as hard as I could, her breasts moving so that I was between them, and I could feel one on each side as if she were getting ready to finger fuck my entire body.

That was when I felt it, the tip of my pussy finding the point where his skin led into space, waiting for me to enter. I was finally about to be inside a pussy! I started kissing her hard, put my tongue in her mouth, and pushed my hips forward.

It was tighter than I ever imagined! Her ring slowly expanded around my dickhead.

She groaned as I started rocking in and out, but the pressure was not relaxing on my fingers.

How deep did I have to be in her for this?

Her vaginal walls took a second to reach, but eventually my pussy was squeezed in her flesh prison. Then it flashed in my climax, I must have reached her cervix.

I had heard some teenage girls like me in my first-year Gym class an athlete type of girl saying to her changing body girls of next to her, in the locker-room in-between the lockers, talk about this, about how if you were long enough you could fuck a girl so deep and good that she would gladly make you

cum I never thought I would be one of those girls like this. Her hands left my back, and she broke our kiss with a gasp.

'Damn girl! You are extravagant! I love it! I can only feel you in my stomach. No one has ever done this before. Leave it to a virgin... ugh... that is it! Harder! Let me hear you!'

‘Again, I am not one of those...’

Her encouragement put me in sexual confusion. This is when this started, I remembered this was the start of this.

It was my first time with a girl, and I was already so fucked so good in my younger life that she even though I was begging for more.

Part of me was already imagining our future or what mine would be if this were to get out, or if that were just the plain of the plot to trick me, even so, I could not stop the feeling.

By doing this twice a day for the rest of the year, is it true that boy got you pregnant? I do not remember what I remember saying.

I am going to graduate even if, and someday get an excellent job, and marry this big, beautiful man that I love. I am pushing harder and harder into my fantasies and my biology is pushing me forward.

She grunted amid shouts of encouragement. Just yesterday, I was nobody in her mind, now lips deep in this beautiful creature, I pushed hard one last time into her, and I held while my lips exploded. I screamed as I came, feeling my seed run down me to be deep within her. There was more and it lasted longer than before.

As I went downstairs, I cradled her face in my hands and showered her with kisses. 'It is okay... okay... I will be a good woman! Know that you will take care of yourself and our children, Nevaeh.

Interval: 3 Perception's

(The New World Order)

Part:

Nevaeh- My goal is neither deep volume, willingly a dissimilar way of comprehending. My room is cold and lifeless like me as if laying on the mergeable with my feet slightly and being drained of all blood in my past life looking down to the new moments of remembrances.

-Yet-

Everything in my life was nothing more than Anhedonia- the inability to feel pleasure. And that of being called a Punk- a worthless person (often used as a general term of abuse.)

In a moment of remembering in my past, looking back into my mind like a doorway to time the clocking in my room chattering as if I were not even there is if to be insolent to me as I was to it, my fingers squeeze so tightly that I could not move as his whole body tightened.

Her breathing stopped for what seemed too long before she gasped again. She touched the top of my head until I finally released her from my mouth and pulled my hand from her, now relaxing.

She drew me to her and kissed me and held me close to her in this gentle way that I imagined true lovers would share.

I remember this school trip, I was sitting with Lily, their slight ant and say time expired; I remember back into my mind the school trip of spending time at Tianman Shan Cable Cars, I loved that, more than a girl my age really should. Even if the undergraduates were there to babysit me as said by the head teaching staff looking out for my class.

I felt like I was told, putting her upright in her chair back, as if to put together her strength and then helping her settle into it. Her head and shoulders were reclined halfway up the back of the chair while the rest of her was stretched out on the seat to the point she was halfway up the chair as most do on this ride.

I watched this incredible girl stretch out in front of me as she opened her legs for me and invited me to stand between them as lovers. It was so hard it almost hurt on the inside not to.

I wanted nothing more than to bury myself inside her, to finally fulfill my fantasies, but there was also nervousness and I hesitated.

She was so beautiful there, she stared at me lustfully as her face was framed by her dark reddish-brown hair.

She was propped high enough that the armrests were under her arms and those two padded wooden supports helped to hold the titanic feelings of her legs and arms when she would try to stand, together we would do just that, and on top of her belly that stood out prominently, the faint traces of the scarring from childhood still visible and between the darker stretch marks from skin gripping moments from mother, yet at this time we had no idea that we shared the same mother at all over the fact we were only 13 years of age.

It all leads to these huge thighs wide open for me and this dripping pink snatch that looked so inviting. Remembering lost time is what I have wasted my life remembering in foolishness, to feel that I have not lost out on moments in a time forgotten.

-And-

Unique genuine excursion of development consists as meanwhile investigating distinct scenes, but in begetting uncontaminated sights. Like being in the moments of looking into the eyes the same as 'Iguazu' falls where I longed to be before the end of my life yet never in true life, to ever see, yet used to hold the moments of the feeling I had towards her, my best friend in life.

The eyes just like the Iguazú Falls or Iguacu Falls are waterfalls of the Iguazu River on the border of the Argentine province of Misiones and the Brazilian state of Paraná. Together, they make up the largest waterfall in the world. The falls divide the river into the upper and lower Iguazu. Deep in my mind at that moment I was there with her and lost the power and the feeling of being moved.

I was there with her in my mind now of my death. In the moments of not feeling accomplished, non-waiting for the season. They do not desire this ever before like this. Being knowledgeable, regularly and at each consequence, that the wonder is in the hereabouts and promptly our soul's blossom.

Like the moment of the first when I threw the last of my fears aside and transferred to her, pressing myself against her warm and inviting form.

I kissed her desperately yet for such short of time, a time that was hard to my need of having and if to long for the wrong would make my mind

feel the pain of taken the feeling of comforting me away, needing to reclaim that moment that had trapped me with its siren love song of her feeling of needing me.

Then, I dragged kisses down her cheek and neck cheeks that are plump to mine cheeks as soft and as young and as sweet to feel as babyhood could be, all the way to those gorgeous breasts that had lured me in the first place just like the deep poring of the eyes of wonder.

I kissed the cheeks of softness as if matching cleavage, felt her hand rise to rest on the back of my head, holding me to her body as she moaned happily to feel my millennial ghost within me gives an aspiration of loving rushes through her body as if a power of energy to feel more than she should have.

Give us be beholden to characters who address us comfortably, others are the beautiful landscapers who execute our hearts bud.

My goal is neither deep volume, willingly a dissimilar way of comprehending. Reconstruction of items history remains not surely the remembrance about everything as they continued.

Some relationships within individually furthermore different self and others we linger as impressions survive simply in our spirits.

Remembrance, as it becomes more moderate, unfixes them, and notwithstanding the dream by which we require to be deceived furthermore which, without appreciation, kindness, civility, deference, patronage, we deceive other spirits, we survive solo.

The fellowship we had was more human than others gave to us, the human whose container flees from itself, and which acknowledges other spirits solely selves, furthermore, when she affirms the contrary, she is lying.

Until you benefit to delight others you cannot serve, outwardly the something you perform to develop yourself attain the destiny of preventing someone's skirmish.

We do not accommodate understanding; we require to create it individually after a campaign that no one package relishes for us or forbears us. Hope performs everything bad.

Alternatively, by investigating new sceneries, acquire current sights. That is the same as looking into landscapes.

I grabbed her waist and obeyed, stretching my entire length until only the tip remained inside her and then entering. I was rewarded with the cutest grunt, and she smiled encouragingly.

Here, you will not hurt me, just touch me as fast and as hard as you can. She raised my head for a quick kiss, then held me so she could look directly at me so high in the air in the cable car lovemaking. Worship is a season like time and participation included by the mind is the feeling of love.

Entertainment is advantageous for the heart; however, it is sorrow that strengthens the abilities of the soul and its painting moments into the brain.

As I tried my best to kiss and lick every inch of her beautiful face and neck, my hands ran down her stomach to her mounds. I let my fingers play in the little bristly hair of the triangle that indicated my destination.

Then my left hand moved further down and I spread those lips hanging open, and as I claimed her left areola with my mouth, I realized the head of my palms on her, to her opening and slowly pushed her inside as if people in lovemaking yet of minds not having love as if a doorway to linking that was summit higher than us in the skies, above and the ground below, it was young puppy love.

Souls-like us at this moment lost in time recaptured arranges thoughts with no expiring during us but shortly nevertheless live submerged in a variety of aura, characteristic a spirit like an angle to time and the mind, as to me as glowing of record times... and which exhibits neither relative genuine salvation

in heaven or hellish, but within souls recommence to keep our thoughtfulness in the equivalent behavior as if they were savoring and not the failure to be obsessed in have times like this end.

That is as though they continued progressing away like a fool to you and as you are to it the moment of passion like love, love like emotion, as excitement is a stunning symbol of whence nothing more than tiny presence suggests upon us to feel foolish and childlike to the rest of the world in a moment of need.

Lily, she inhaled deeply as I pushed deeper and deeper into the lost time of her days now then and past, as I quaffed and swill harder into her times of days, keeping the pressure on her times sharp as mine were lost as if to be on a newfound high. God, how could I have been so wrong before in what is love?

Meanwhile, the soul tends to consider, it is a blunder to grasp impressions away of that, to allot its desires.

Extremely great as you entertain your thought of its fantasies, its inclination not to remember them for something they move; y'all promise always to be remaining considered in by the image of things because you pleasure denying ought to grasp their true quality.

If scarce dreaming is pressing, the cure concerning it is not to conceive more succinctly though to picture further, to daydream whole the time is being in the one you love or at least at that moment.

One condition has a thoroughgoing opinion of the individual that is lost in another, and like memories started to be lost to me due to my disabilities come on stronger taking away moments like this where my life ended, and yet did not or so the thoughts tricked my mind in future furthermore fate.

A touch that is so sensual in its embrace. I could feel her hug and relax around me, voiceless asking me to go deeper. She moaned as I reached inside until my lips were pressed against her. A time like this is not simply a minute, that is a porcelain comprehensive of fragrances and characters moreover outlines, and spirits.

Our intelligence is neutralizing the several definite, these numerous compelling, the various fit, device for reporting the accuracy back to remembering.

That is a special record that, tiny by light, illustration by pictures actions us to discern that anything is various relevant to our mind, or our brain, is seen not by rationalizing simply within other companies.

Before it is that the brain, commemorating their perfection, relinquishes its direction to them superimposed reasoned territories and suits to display their assistant and liveryman.

I collapsed on top of her as every ounce of strength left my body and she held me tight as I slowly deflated inside her until I popped out. I could feel our combined starting to drain from her.

It is encouraging meanwhile one ought to anguish to loll against the temperature of one's area and there, forsaking all energy and all protection, to engross despite one's headline beneath the shelter, falling oneself up to it perfectly, whining like wings in the autumn wind. Though there is still a better area, full of divine fragrances. It is our gentleness, our deep-felt, our unfathomable tenderness. I would have given anything to resurrect but I was exhausted.

As I pick up the pace, I feel that familiar urge building inside me. squeezing myself relentlessly and I finally deep inside her causing her peak. She shakes and shivers as her summit overwhelms her.

I have had many fantasies about my sister, but I always stop myself before going too far. It would be my pleasure to please her, but the possibility of me sharing a bed with my sister intimately is more than dreaming, but I knew if

it ever actually happened, I would not refuse her. She is too beautiful to deny, and I will not. Time was and is both of our deaths.

All our definitive judgments are given in a kingdom of consciousness that is showing to the memory of our movements in time lost yet seen by all given in their time to understand and feel us.

Part:

I think of it like this...

(The Misunderstood, classification)

Different shades of the same color.

Nevaeh- Teach no Shame:

Teach them to throw their legs up at any moment and be cool with it. Dildos for Teens and pre-teens with ADHD (attention deficit hyperactivity disorder), now there is a thought. Masturbating until able for a child to think and work on other tasks, like homework or schooling. Could lust the thought of boys or young love, keep one from studying, maybe so. They need a way to get it out, so try this method.

Ideas and findings of ADHD- to the points of obsessive to the argument that the Attention Hyperactivity Disorder is taking over the child's

teenage mind or preteen mind, and you as a mom dad, or even educator has had enough, I would have some suggestions in this field of what to do.

After 4 years of a case study of being next to a girl, that had severe ADHD and witnessing the fact that she was considered only as one name the crazy girl within my school system, I have come to the understanding, that this girl could not help her longing and want- (having a boy on the brain,) she was not crazy she was just over sex with no one to show her how to take care of her sexual needs, So the best thing that, I could say to parents out there because, it is not the school system ideal's to teach a young girl from ages 7- 14 and up, what she needs to do to help herself, all you need to do with a child, give them a dildo, with a girl that is showing extreme fits rages in tantrums is teach him how to use a dildo, and let them get it out of the head and body.

Also, I feel if this is what this girl needs to be doing- and has never had self-exploration, over being religious, sham, and virginity and lack of education. Yet mom and dads out there if she has ADHD or Autistic or any disability where she cannot focus on studies, get her a 7-speed rabbit, and not drugs. Why- she would be so tired out in her brain- she would now be able to rest- at night- start with 6 or more comes before school, and before bedtime, and even before homework, and her studies should much improve. Also, as a reward

to herself, she would be able to focus on her studies- having the days stresses relieved.

Sometimes, we like to classify things as other things in the world where medication is the right way to treat any student that is showing a lack of paying attention during a class. 'The dope for hope program...' When the simple remedy could just be that she needs some time for self-pleasure.

So, in this short little understanding- I would say to mothers and fathers of anybody with a young daughter regardless of age if they have ADHD teach them how to do this activity- on their own time, up to his 20 times if needed completely drain them get all the sexual frustration out of them and let them focus on your studies.

You want a 7-year-old up to 18 and up to start masturbating, no that is up to you as a parent, yet in this fast finding of help to all those out there, masturbating is a key to them having an education. Am I an expert now, trying to help others out there for sure?

The first thing the brain has running before all other things is called the Libido- system, the need to have sex and love, and that is the first thing that is causing the reproduction system to go into overdrive, with somebody with ADHD the parts of the brain the libido is asking for this like some that are

addicted, this is going to be overactive as well, and thoughts in other parts of the brain now are going to shut off, when now sex is the main thoughts.

ADHD comes down to an overactive libido, and I would like to see if my thoughts on this study are right- by commenting below. Girls with ADHD need to learn to love themselves and their body, and having this start and end activate may be just what the doctor needs.

Attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) is a brain disorder marked by an ongoing pattern of inattention and/or hyperactivity-impulsivity that interferes with functioning or development. Thus, they are childlike, so let them grow up fast, with adult toys.

Partake in a positive mental attitude and keep your stress level low, something that is necessary with ADHD. Deliberate, but do not overly rely on, special foods and supplements that claim to increase your libido- yet Ritalin is just that.

ADHD has a be inattentive type, hyperactive-impulsive type, combination type. Symptoms will determine which type of ADHD you have. To be diagnosed with ADHD, symptoms must have an impact on your day-to-day life. Consider the underappreciated psychological component of sex drive.

Prepare for intimacy. Find out which scenarios spark magic for you, and get that part of the brain at rest, one less thing, ADHD is attacking.

Symptoms can change over time, so the type of ADHD you have may change, too.

ADHD can be a lifelong challenge. But medication and other treatments can help improve your quality of life, yet that is true- however, self-help may help you or your child more. Each type of ADHD is tied to one or more characteristics- do doctors say.

ADHD is characterized by inattention and hyperactive-impulsive behavior. (You would know that if you were here.)

These behaviors often present in the following ways:

Inattention

Getting distracted

Having poor concentration

Organizational skills

Impulsivity interrupting

Taking risks

Hyperactivity

Never seems to slow down in what it is that you are doing at that given time

Talking too much about things others do not care to hear. (Diarrhea of the mouth)

Fidgeting

Difficulties and staying on task.

Ganser syndrome is a rare dissociative disorder characterized by nonsensical or wrong answers to questions and other dissociative symptoms such as fugue, amnesia, or conversion disorder, often with visual pseudohallucinations and a decreased state of consciousness. The syndrome has also been called a nonsense syndrome, balderdash syndrome, syndrome of approximate answers, hysterical pseudodementia, or prison psychosis. The term prison psychosis is sometimes used because the syndrome occurs most frequently in prison inmates, where it may be seen as an attempt to gain leniency from prison or court officials. Psychological symptoms resemble the patient's sense of mental illness rather than any recognized category. The syndrome may occur in people with other mental disorders such as schizophrenia, depressive disorders, toxic states, paresis, alcohol use disorders, and factitious disorders.

Ganser syndrome can sometimes be diagnosed as merely malingering, but it is more often defined as a dissociative disorder.

Anhedonia Inability to feel pleasure.

Everyone is different, so it is common for two people to experience the same symptoms in diverse ways. For example, these behaviors are often different in boys and girls. Boys may be seen as more hyperactive, and girls may be quietly inattentive.

Inattentive ADHD, if you have this type of ADHD, you may experience more symptoms of inattention than those of impulsivity and hyperactivity. You may struggle with impulse control or hyperactivity at times. Nonetheless, these are not the main characteristics of inattentive ADHD.

People who experience inattentive behavior often,

Miss details and are distracted easily

Get bored quickly

Have trouble focusing on a single task

Have difficulty organizing thoughts and learning current information

Lose pencils, papers, or other items needed to complete a task

Do not seem to listen

Move slowly and appear as if they are daydreaming

process information more slowly and less

accurately than others have trouble following directions

More girls are diagnosed with inattentive type ADHD than boys.

Autism is one of the five pervasive developmental disorders (PDD), which are characterized by widespread abnormalities of social interactions and communication, severely restricted interests, and highly repetitive behavior.

“The spectrum. Social Skills A child with ASD has a tough time interacting with others like with Aspergers. Asperger syndrome (AS,) also known as Asperger's, is a developmental disorder characterized by significant difficulties in social interaction and nonverbal communication, along with restricted and repetitive patterns of behavior and interests.”

Problems with social skills are some of the most common signs. He might want to have close relationships but not knowledge. As someone with PD and Dementia- and Asexuality.

If your child is on the spectrum, he might show some social symptoms by the time he is 8 to 10 months old. These may include any of the following:

He cannot respond to his name on his/her first birthday.

Playing, sharing, or talking with other people does not interest him.

He prefers to be alone.

He avoids or rejects physical contact.

When he is upset, he does not like to be comforted.

He does not understand emotions -- his own or others.'

Questions-

Or are they showing signs of this- Dementia refers to a group of symptoms that together affect the memory, normal thinking, communicating, and reasoning ability of a person.

These symptoms make it difficult to perform even simpler daily tasks such as bathing and eating.

Part of

Alzheimer's disease is the main cause of most cases of dementia.

Dementia cannot be cured but there are medications to manage the symptoms. Dementia is a group of conditions characterized by impairment of at least two brain functions, such as memory loss and judgment.

Symptoms include forgetfulness, limited social skills, and thinking abilities so impaired, that it interferes with daily functioning. Medications and therapies may help manage symptoms. Some causes are reversible.

Now think about what you just read about ADHD, the same... So is ADHD just a newfound way of classifying something we did not understand which its ADHD was beforehand which could just be showing early signs of dementia.

Yet, dementia is not something you see in kids or teens.

I pounder- Requires a medical diagnosis, yet signs include forgetfulness, limited social skills, and thinking abilities so impaired that it interferes with daily functioning. Sound like ADHD to me in children... is ADHD just the start of the brain shutting down over being overworked and doing the same things over to please a teacher that can be pleased. Making dementia progress even faster?

I wonder some more-

Dementia- Cognitive: memory loss, mental decline, confusion in the evening hours, disorientation, inability to speak or understand language, making things up, mental confusion, or inability to recognize common things.

That is every so-called child with ADHD and parts of the Autism spectrum.

Dementia- Behavioral: irritability, personality changes, restlessness, lack of restraint, or wandering and getting lost, in my thoughts the drugs to use sound more like- someone that has Parkinson's in the need of dopa, or Dopamine.

Dopamine aids in the function of controlled behavior, mental health, or even involuntary movement if lack-of. This leads to the question is the moment movements and whether you are saying the lack of thought or the inability.

Mood: anxiety, loneliness, mood swings, or nervousness. Also shown in Dementia, ADHD, PD, MS, and even ALS; and most disabilities.

The far is only in the old thought of the mind of the age, right? Feeling like I lost my only friend... now bipolar too, happy to sad as if you have PTSD and PBA, is it all the same? Bad nerves... or is it just the mind shutting down- due to the Environment around the person around the child.

The behavior occurs more often and interferes with how you function at home, school, work, and in social situations. (Or out of one's comfort zone)

Dementia- Psychological: depression, hallucination, or paranoia. The same can be said with a child with ADHD. And older age neurological conditions, so what gives? Do these children need to live with a mental handicap or is it just a neurological condition of bad nerves and slowly having brain fatigue? Do kids need to live with a learning disability of a stigma, or did they just have mental decay of dementia now this leaves a problem with me because there are 2 major Lee different things, Mental means and boil down word's retardation, Neurology means uncontrolled shrinking of the temporal lobes- and the stopping of need dopa if you have PD, so what is it?

Muscular: inability to combine muscle movements or unsteady walking, that would take me to PD- and I give my thoughts on this- Also common: falling, jumbled speech, or sleep disorder.

So, is your child ADHD or do they have premature signs of Parkinson's?

Parkinson's is still very much misunderstood. A disorder of the central nervous system that affects movement, often including tremors. Yet there is much more than just shaking to this...

Parkinson's often starts with a tremor in one hand. (Or the look of fidgeting,) Other symptoms are slow movement, stiffness, and loss of balance. (Hum the same as a child with ADHD and types of Autism.)

Tremor: can occur at rest, in the hands, limbs, or can be postural, (making a child look ADHD, or mental when not)

Muscular: stiff muscles, difficulty standing, difficulty walking, difficulty with bodily movements, involuntary movements, muscle rigidity, problems with coordination, rhythmic muscle contractions, slow bodily movement, or slow shuffling gait-

Sleep: daytime sleepiness (daydreaming,) early awakening, nightmares, restless sleep, or sleep disturbances

Whole-body: fatigue, dizziness, poor balance, or restlessness.

Cognitive: amnesia, confusion in the evening hours, dementia, or difficulty thinking and understanding.

Speech: difficulty speaking, soft speech, or voice box spasms. (Cracking- or shrill voices in a child with ADHD)

Mood: anxiety or apathy

Nasal: the distorted sense of smell or loss of smell

Urinary: dribbling of urine or leaking of urine (bedwetting) common in children with ADHD.

Facial: jaw stiffness or reduced facial expression, at times, with older age PD, and overactive with a child with ADHD, only at times as well.

Also common with PD older and ADHD younger is blank stare, constipation, depression, difficulty swallowing, drooling, falling, fear of falling, loss in contrast sensitivity, neck tightness, small handwriting, trembling, unintentional writhing, or weight loss. The same in every way.

Medications

Dopamine promoter, Antidepressant,

Cognition-enhancing medication, and Anti-Tremor

Self-care

Physical exercise

Specialists

Neurologist

Treats nervous system disorders.

Primary care provider (PCP)

Prevents, diagnoses, and treats diseases.

Along with and not tried yet given a child with ADHD, the same drugs as someone with PD.

About

Parkinson's disease (PD) is a long-term degenerative disorder of the central nervous system that affects the motor system.

The symptoms come on slowly over time.

Early in the disease, the most obvious are shaking, rigidity, slowness of movement, and difficulty with walking.

Thinking and behavioral problems may also occur.

Dementia has become common in the advanced stages of the disease.

Depression and anxiety are also commonly occurring in more than a third of people with PD.

Other symptoms include sensory, sleep, and emotional problems.

The main motor symptoms are collectively called

"parkinsonism", or "parkinsonian syndrome."

Parkinson's disease-

“A disorder of the central nervous system that affects movement, often as well as having tremors.”

Nerve cell damage in the brain causes dopamine levels to drop, leading to the symptoms of Parkinson's.

Parkinson's often starts with a tremor in one hand. Other symptoms are slow movement, stiffness, and loss of balance.

Medications can help control the symptoms of Parkinson's. studies

In 2015, PD affected 6.2 million people (about twice the population of Nevada) and resulted in about 117,400 deaths globally.

Parkinson's disease typically occurs in people over the age of 60, of which about one percent are affected.

Males are more often affected than females.

When it is seen in people before the age of 50, it is called young-onset PD.

The average life expectancy following diagnosis is between 7 and 14 years.

The disease is named after the English doctor James Parkinson, who published the first detailed description in An Essay on the Shaking Palsy, in 1817.

Public awareness campaigns include the World

Parkinson's Day (on the birthday of James Parkinson, 11 April) and the use of a red tulip as the symbol of the disease.

People with parkinsonism who have increased the public's awareness of the condition include actor Michael J. Fox, Olympic cyclist Davis Phinney, and late professional boxer Muhammad Ali.

Ages affected

0-2 Never

3-5 Never

6-13 Very Rare

14 Very Rare

18

19Rare

40

41-

Common

60

60+ Common

The cause of Parkinson's disease is unknown but believed to involve both genetic and environmental factors.

Those with a family member affected are more likely to get the disease themselves.

There is also an increased risk in people exposed to certain pesticides and among those who have had prior head injuries, while there is a reduced risk in tobacco smokers and those who drink coffee or tea.

The motor symptoms of the disease result from the death of cells in the substantia nigra, a region of the midbrain.

This results in not enough dopamine in these areas.

The reason for this cell death is poorly understood but involves the build-up of proteins into Lewy bodies in the neurons.

Diagnosis of typical cases is based on symptoms, with tests such as neuroimaging being used to rule out other diseases.

SYMPTOMS

Requires a medical diagnosis

Parkinson's often starts with a tremor in one hand. Other symptoms are slow movement, stiffness, and loss of balance.

People may experience:

Tremors involuntary quivering movement:

"a disorder that causes tremors and muscle rigidity"

Tremor: can occur at rest, in the hands, limbs, or can be postural

Muscular: stiff muscles, difficulty standing, difficulty with bodily movements, involuntary movements, muscle rigidity, problems with coordination, rhythmic muscle contractions, slow bodily movement, or slow shuffling gait

Sleep: early awakening, nightmares, restless sleep, or sleep disturbances

Whole-body and Mind: fatigue, dizziness, poor balance, or
restlessness

Cognitive: amnesia, confusion in the evening hours, dementia, or
difficulty thinking and understanding

Speech: impaired voice, soft speech, or voice box spasms

Mood: anxiety or apathy

Nasal: the distorted sense of smell or loss of smell

Urinary: dribbling of urine or leaking of urine

Facial: jaw stiffness or reduced facial expression...

Also, common: blank stare, constipation, daytime sleepiness,
depression, difficulty swallowing, drooling, falling, fear of falling, limping, loss
in contrast sensitivity, neck tightness, small handwriting, trembling,
unintentional writhing, or weight loss consult a doctor for medical advice.

Treatment consists of medications to increase dopamine

Medications can help control the symptoms of Parkinson's.

More synonyms-

Parkinson's disease, idiopathic or primary parkinsonism, hypokinetic rigid syndrome, paralysis agitans.

Medications

Dopamine promoter, Antidepressant,

Cognition-enhancing medication, and Anti-Tremor Dopamine promoter

Stimulates dopamine receptors in the brain.

Common drugs

Bromocriptine

It can treat menstrual problems, growth hormone overproduction, Parkinson's disease, and pituitary tumors. It can also stop breast milk production. Besides, this medication can help control blood sugar levels in patients with type 2 diabetes.

Common brands: Parlodel and Cycloset

Prescription needed

Amantadine

It can treat and prevent the flu (influenza type A.) It can also treat Parkinson's disease and Parkinson Like symptoms caused by certain medications.

Prescription needed

Cabergoline

It can lower elevated levels of the hormone prolactin in the blood.

Prescription needed

Carbidopa / Levodopa

It can treat Parkinson's disease.

Common brands: Sinemet, Duopa, Sinemet

CR, and...

Rytary

Prescription needed

Ropinirole

It can treat Parkinson's disease and restless legs syndrome (RLS.)

Common brands: Requip and Requip XL

Prescription needed

Entacapone

It can treat Parkinson's disease.

Common brands: Comtan

Prescription needed

Tolcapone

It can treat symptoms of Parkinson's disease, such as tremors, stiffness, and slow movement when given with levodopa/carbidopa.

Common brands: Tasmar

Prescription needed

Pramipexole

It can treat Parkinson's disease and restless legs syndrome.

Common brands: Mirapex and Mirapex ER Prescription needed

Rotigotine

It can treat Parkinson's disease and restless leg syndrome.

Common brands: Neupro

Prescription needed

Antidepressant

Prevents or relieves depression and elevates mood.

Common drugs

Selegiline

It can treat Parkinson's disease and depression.

Common brands: Emsam, Zelapar, and

Eldepryl

Prescription needed

Rasagiline

It can treat Parkinson's disease.

Common brands: Azilect

Prescription needed

Cognition-enhancing medication

Improves mental function, lowers blood pressure, and may balance mood.

Common drugs

Rivastigmine

It can treat dementia.

Prescription needed

Anti-Tremor

It helps control tremors, shaking, and unsteadiness.

Common drugs

Benzotropine

It can treat Parkinson's disease and the side effects of other drugs.

Common brands: Cogentin

Prescription needed

Self-care

Physical exercise

Aerobic activity for 20-30 minutes 5 days a week improves cardiovascular health. If injured, pursuing an activity that avoids the injured muscle group or joint can help maintain physical function while recovering.

Specialists

Neurologist and Primary care provider (PCP)

Symptoms of dementia-

Memory

Communication and language

Ability to focus and pay attention

Reasoning and judgment • Visual

perception

Dementia is caused by damage to brain cells. This damage interferes with the ability of brain cells to communicate with each other. When brain cells cannot communicate normally, thinking, behavior, and feelings can be affected.

The brain has many distinct regions, each of which is responsible for distinct functions (for example, memory, judgment, and movement.)

When cells in a particular region are damaged, that region cannot carry out its functions normally.

Diverse types of dementia are associated with types of brain cell damage in particular regions of the brain. For example, in Alzheimer's disease, elevated levels of certain proteins inside and outside brain cells make it hard for brain cells to stay healthy and to communicate with each other. The brain region called the hippocampus is the center of learning and memory in the brain, and

the brain cells in this region are often the first to be damaged. That is why memory loss is often one of the earliest symptoms of Alzheimer's.

While most changes in the brain that cause dementia are permanent and worsen over time, thinking and memory problems caused by the following conditions may improve when the condition is treated or addressed:

Depression

Medication side effects

Excess use of alcohol

Thyroid problems

Vitamin deficiencies

The cause of Parkinson's disease is unknown but believed to involve both genetic and environmental factors.

Those with a family member affected are more likely to get the disease themselves.

There is also an increased risk in people exposed to certain pesticides and among those who have had prior head injuries, while there is a reduced risk in tobacco smokers and those who drink coffee or tea.

The motor symptoms of the disease result from the death of cells in the substantia nigra, a region of the midbrain.

This results in not enough dopamine in these areas.

The reason for this cell death is poorly understood but involves the build-up of proteins into Lewy bodies in the neurons.

Diagnosis of typical cases is based on symptoms, with tests such as neuroimaging being used to rule out other diseases.

There is no cure for Parkinson's disease, with treatment directed at improving symptoms.

Initial treatment is typically with the antiparkinson medication levodopa (L-DOPA), with dopamine agonists being used once levodopa becomes less effective.

As the disease progresses and neurons continue to be lost, these medications become less effective while at the same time they produce a complication marked by involuntary writhing movements.

Diet and some forms of rehabilitation have shown some effectiveness at improving symptoms.

Surgery to place microelectrodes for deep brain stimulation has been used to reduce motor symptoms in severe cases where drugs are ineffective.

Evidence for treatments for the non-movement-related symptoms of PD, such as sleep disturbances and emotional problems, is less strong.

Movements

The movement difficulties found in PD are called "parkinsonism" and several different disorders feature parkinsonism.

Parkinson's disease is the most generic form of parkinsonism and is sometimes called "idiopathic parkinsonism", meaning parkinsonism with no identifiable cause.

"Parkinsonism" is defined as bradykinesia (slowness in initiating voluntary movements, with a progressive reduction in speed and range of repetitive actions such as voluntary finger-tapping) in combination with one of three other physical signs: muscular (lead-pipe or cogwheel) rigidity, tremor at rest, and postural instability.

Identifiable causes of parkinsonism include toxins, infections, side effects of drugs, metabolic derangement, and brain lesions such as strokes.

Several neurodegenerative disorders also may present with parkinsonism and are sometimes referred to as "atypical parkinsonism" or "Parkinson's plus"

syndromes (illnesses with parkinsonism plus some other features distinguishing them from PD.) They include multiple system atrophy, progressive supranuclear palsy, corticobasal degeneration, and dementia with Lewy bodies (DLB.)

Scientists sometimes refer to Parkinson's disease as a synucleinopathy (due to an abnormal accumulation of alpha-synuclein protein in the brain) to distinguish it from other neurodegenerative diseases, such as Alzheimer's disease where the brain accumulates tau protein.

Considerable clinical and pathological overlap exists between tauopathies and synucleinopathies. In contrast to Parkinson's disease, Alzheimer's disease presents most commonly with memory loss, and the cardinal signs of Parkinson's disease (slowness, tremor, stiffness, and postural instability) are not normal features of Alzheimer's.

Alzheimer's disease- A progressive disease that destroys memory and other important mental functions.

Also called: senile dementia

Requires a medical diagnosis

Memory loss and confusion are the main symptoms.

People may experience:

Cognitive: mental decline, difficulty thinking, and understanding, confusion in the evening hours, delusion, disorientation, forgetfulness, making things up, mental confusion, difficulty concentrating, inability to create new memories,

inability to do simple math, or inability to recognize common things

Behavioral: aggression, agitation, difficulty with self-care, irritability, meaningless repetition of own words, personality changes, restlessness, lack of restraint, or wandering and getting lost

Mood: anger, apathy, general discontent, loneliness, or mood swings

Psychological: depression, hallucination, or paranoia

Also common: inability to combine muscle movements, jumbled speech, or loss of appetite, Treatment consists of cognition-enhancing medications

No cure exists, but medications and management strategies may temporarily improve symptoms.

Dementia with Lewy bodies is another synucleinopathy and it has close pathological similarities with PD, especially with the subset of PD cases

with dementia. The relationship between PD and DLB is complex and incompletely understood.

They may represent parts of a continuum with variable distinguishing clinical and pathological features, or they may prove to be separate diseases.

The most recognizable symptoms in

Parkinson's disease is movement ("motor") related.

Non-motor symptoms, which include autonomic dysfunction, neuropsychiatric problems (mood, cognition, behavior, or thought alterations), and sensory (especially altered sense of smell), and sleep difficulties, are also common. Some of these non-motor symptoms may be present at the time of diagnosis.

Motor

Further information: Parkinsonian gait,

Four motor symptoms are considered cardinal in PD: tremor, slowness of movement (bradykinesia), rigidity, and postural instability.

The most common presenting sign is a coarse slow tremor of the hand at rest which disappears during voluntary movement of the affected arm and in the deeper stages of sleep.

It typically appears in only one hand, eventually affecting both hands as the disease progresses.

The frequency of PD tremors is between 4 and 6 hertz (cycles per second.) A feature of tremor is pill-rolling, the tendency of the index finger and thumb to touch and perform together with a circular movement.

The term derives from the similarity between the movement of people with PD and the

The early pharmaceutical technique of manually
making pills

Bradykinesia (slowness of movement) is found in every case of PD and is due to disturbances in motor planning of movement initiation and associated with difficulties along the whole course of the movement process, from planning to initiation to the execution of a movement. Performance of sequential and simultaneous movement is impaired.

Bradykinesia is the most handicapping symptom of Parkinson's disease leading to difficulties with everyday tasks such as dressing, feeding, and bathing. It leads to difficulty in carrying out two independent motor activities at the same time and can be made worse by emotional stress or intercurrent illnesses.

Paradoxically patients with Parkinson's disease can often ride a bicycle or climb stairs more easily than walk on a level. While most physicians may readily notice bradykinesia, formal assessment requires a patient to do repetitive movements with their fingers and feet.

Rigidity is stiffness and resistance to limb movement caused by increased muscle tone, an excessive and continuous contraction of muscles.

In parkinsonism, the rigidity can be uniform ("lead-pipe rigidity") or ratchety ("cogwheel rigidity".)

The combination of tremor and increased tone is at the origin of cogwheel rigidity. Rigidity may be associated with joint pain; such pain being a frequent initial manifestation of the disease.

In the initial stages of Parkinson's disease, rigidity is often asymmetrical, and it tends to affect the neck and shoulder muscles before the muscles of the face and extremities.

With the progression of the disease, rigidity typically affects the whole body and reduces the ability to move.

This is the text showing good handwriting.

Handwriting would start to look like the above. This is the text showing what happens when affected...

Postural instability is typical in the later stages of the disease, leading to impaired balance and frequent falls, and secondarily to bone fractures, loss of confidence, and reduced mobility.

Instability is often absent in the initial stages, especially in younger people, especially before the development of bilateral symptoms.

Up to 40% of people diagnosed with PD may experience falls and around 10% may have falls weekly, with the number of falls being related to the severity of PD.

Other recognized motor signs and symptoms include gait and posture disturbances such as festination (rapid shuffling steps and a forward-flexed posture when walking with no flexed arm swing.)

Freezing of gait (brief arrests when the feet get stuck to the floor, especially on turning or changing direction), a slurred monotonous quiet voice, mask-like facial expression, and handwriting that gets smaller and smaller are other common signs.

Neuropsychiatric

Parkinson's disease can cause neuropsychiatric disturbances, which can range from mild to severe. This includes disorders of cognition, mood, behavior, and thought,

Cognitive disturbances can occur in the initial stages of the disease and sometimes before diagnosis and increase in prevalence with the duration of the disease.

The most common cognitive deficit in PD is executive dysfunction, which can include problems with planning, cognitive flexibility, abstract thinking, rule acquisition, inhibiting inappropriate actions, initiating appropriate actions, working memory, and control of attention.

Other cognitive difficulties include slowed cognitive processing speed, impaired recall, and impaired perception and estimation of the time.

Nevertheless, improvement appears when a recall is aided by cues.

Visuospatial difficulties are also part of the disease, seen for example when the individual is asked to perform tests of facial recognition and perception of the orientation of drawn lines.

A person with PD has two to six times the risk of dementia compared to the general population.

The prevalence of dementia increases with age and, to a lesser degree, the duration of the disease.

Dementia is associated with a reduced quality of life in people with PD and their caregiver's increased mortality and a higher probability of needing nursing home care.

Impulse control disorders including pathological gambling, compulsive sexual behavior, binge eating, compulsive shopping, and reckless generosity can be caused by medication, particularly orally active dopamine agonists. The dopamine dysregulation syndrome - with wanting of medication leading to overuse - is a rare complication of levodopa use (Giovannoni, et al. 2000.)

Behavior and mood alterations are more common in PD without cognitive impairment than in the general population and are usually present in PD with dementia. The most frequent mood difficulties are depression, apathy, and anxiety.

Establishing the diagnosis of depression is complicated by the fact that the body language of depression may masquerade as PD including a sad expressionless anxious face, a hangdog appearance, slow movement, and monotonous speech.

Up to 30% of people with PD may experience symptoms of anxiety, ranging from a generalized anxiety disorder to social phobia, panic disorders, and obsessive-compulsive disorders. They contribute to impaired quality of life and increase the severity of motor symptoms such as on/off fluctuations or freezing episodes.

Punding in which complicated repetitive aimless stereotyped behaviors occur for many hours is another disturbance caused by anti-Parkinson medication.

Hallucinations or delusions occur in approximately 50% of people with PD throughout the illness and may herald the emergence of dementia. These range from minor hallucinations - "sense of passage" (something quickly passing beside the person) or "sense of presence" (the perception of something/someone standing just to the side or behind the person) - to full-blown vivid, formed visual hallucinations and paranoid ideation.

Auditory hallucinations are uncommon in PD and are rarely described as voices. It is now believed that psychosis is an integral part of the disease.

A psychosis with delusions and associated delirium is a recognized complication of antiParkinson drug treatment and may also be caused by urinary tract infections (as frequently occurs in the fragile elderly), but drugs and

infection are not the only factors, and underlying brain pathology or changes in neurotransmitters or their receptors (e.g., acetylcholine, serotonin) are also thought to play a role in psychosis in PD.

In addition to neuropsychiatric and motor symptoms, PD can impair other functions.

Sleep problems are a feature of the disease and can be worsened by medications.

Symptoms can manifest as daytime drowsiness (including sudden sleep attacks resembling narcolepsy), disturbances in REM sleep, or insomnia.

REM behavior disorder (RBD), in which patients act out dreams, sometimes injuring themselves or their bed partner, may begin many years before the development of motor or cognitive features of PD or DLB.

Alterations in the autonomic nervous system can lead to orthostatic hypotension (low blood pressure upon standing), oily skin and excessive sweating, urinary incontinence, and altered sexual function.

Constipation and impaired stomach emptying (gastric dysmotility) can be severe enough to cause discomfort and even endanger health.

Changes in perception may include an impaired sense of smell, disturbed vision, pain, and paresthesia (tingling and numbness.)

All these symptoms can occur years before the diagnosis of the disease.

Causes

Environmental factors

Exposure to pesticides and a history of head injury have each been linked with Parkinson's disease (PD), but the risks are modest.

Examples- Railroads, coal mining, steel mills.

Never having smoked cigarettes, and never drinking caffeinated beverages, are also associated with small increases in the risk of developing PD.

Low concentrations of urine in the blood serum are associated with an increased risk of PD.

Pathophysiology

Several brain cells stained blue. The largest one, a neuron, with a circular form, has a brown circular body inside it. The brown body is about 40% the diameter of the cell in which it appears.

A Lewy body (stained brown) in a brain cell of the substantia nigra in Parkinson's disease. The brown color is positive immunohistochemistry staining for alpha-synuclein.

Main article: Pathophysiology of Parkinson's disease

The main pathological characteristics of PD are cell death in the brain's basal ganglia (affecting up to 70% of the dopamine-secreting neurons in the substantia nigra pars compacta by the end of life,) and the presence of Lewy bodies (accumulations of the protein alpha-synuclein) in many of the remaining neurons. This loss of neurons is accompanied by the death of astrocytes (star-shaped glial cells) and a significant increase in the number of microglia (another type of glial cell) in the substantia nigra.

There are three circles superimposed along the brainstem and an arrow linking them from bottom to top and continuing upward and forward towards the frontal lobes of the brain. A line of text accompanies each circle: lower is "1. Dorsal Motor X Nucleus", the middle is "2. Gain

Setting Nuclei" and upper is "3. Substantia

Nigra/Amygdala." The fourth line of text above the others says "4."

The two images at the bottom of the composite are magnetic resonance imaging (MRI) scans, one sagittal and the other transverse, centered at the same brain coordinates (x=-1, y=-36, z=-49.) A colored blob marking volume reduction covers most of the brainstem.

Schematic initial progression of Lewy body deposits in the first stages of Parkinson's disease, as proposed by Braak and colleagues' localization of the area of significant brain volume reduction in initial PD compared with a group of participants without the disease in a neuroimaging study, which concluded that brain stem damage may be the first identifiable stage of PD neuropathology

There are five major pathways in the brain connecting other brain areas with the basal ganglia. These are known as the motor, oculomotor, associative, limbic, and orbitofrontal circuits, with names indicating the main projection area of each circuit. All of them are affected in PD, and their disruption explains many of the symptoms of the disease since these circuits are involved in a wide variety of functions, including movement, attention, and learning.

Scientifically, the motor circuit has been examined the most intensively.

A particular conceptual model of the motor circuit and its alteration with PD has been of profound influence since 1980, although some limitations have been pointed out which have led to modifications.

In this model, the basal ganglia normally exert a constant inhibitory influence on a wide range of motor systems, preventing them from becoming

active at inappropriate times. When a decision is made to perform a particular action, inhibition is reduced for the required motor system, thereby releasing it for activation. Dopamine acts to facilitate this release of inhibition, so elevated levels of dopamine function tend to promote motor activity, while low levels of dopamine function, such as those that occur in PD, demand greater exertion of effort for any given movement. Thus, the net effect of dopamine depletion is to produce hypokinesia, an overall reduction in motor output. Drugs that are used to treat PD, conversely, may produce excessive dopamine activity, allowing motor systems to be activated at inappropriate times and thereby producing dyskinesias.

Brain cell death

There is speculation of several mechanisms by which the brain cells could be lost.

One mechanism consists of an abnormal accumulation of the protein alpha-synuclein bound to ubiquitin in the damaged cells. This insoluble protein accumulates inside neurons forming inclusions called Lewy bodies.

According to the Braak staging, a classification of the disease based on pathological findings, Lewy bodies first appear in the olfactory bulb, medulla

oblongata, and pontine tegmentum; individuals at this stage may be asymptomatic or may have early non-motor symptoms

(Such as loss of sense of smell, or some sleep or autonomic dysfunction.)

As the disease progresses, Lewy bodies develop in the substantia nigra, areas of the midbrain and basal forebrain, and, finally, the neocortex.

These brain sites are the main places of neuronal degeneration in PD; however, Lewy bodies may not cause cell death and they may be protective (with the abnormal protein sequestered or walled off.) Other forms of alpha-synuclein (e.g., oligomers) that are not aggregated in Lewy bodies and Lewy neurites may be the toxic forms of the protein.

In people with dementia, a generalized presence of Lewy bodies is common in cortical areas. Neurofibrillary tangles and senile plaques, characteristic of Alzheimer's disease, are not common unless the person is demented.

Other cell-death mechanisms include proteasomal and lysosomal system dysfunction and reduced mitochondrial activity.

Iron accumulation in the substantia nigra is typically observed in conjunction with the protein inclusions. It may be related to oxidative stress,

protein aggregation, and neuronal death, but the mechanisms are not fully understood.

Diagnosis

A physician will initially assess for Parkinson's disease with a careful medical history and neurological examination. People may be given levodopa, with any resulting improvement in motor impairment helping to confirm the PD diagnosis. The finding of Lewy bodies in the midbrain on autopsy is usually considered conclusive proof that the person had PD.

The clinical course of the illness over time may reveal it is not Parkinson's disease, requiring that the clinical presentation be periodically reviewed to confirm the accuracy of the diagnosis.

Other causes that can secondarily produce parkinsonism are stroke and drugs.

Parkinson plus syndromes such as progressive supranuclear palsy and multiple system atrophy must be ruled out.

Anti-Parkinson's medications are typically less effective at controlling symptoms in Parkinson's plus syndromes.

Faster progression rates, early cognitive dysfunction or postural instability, minimal tremor or symmetry at onset may indicate a Parkinson plus disease rather than PD itself.

Genetic forms with an autosomal dominant or recessive pattern of inheritance are sometimes referred to as familial Parkinson's disease or familial parkinsonism.

Medical organizations have created diagnostic criteria to ease and standardize the diagnostic process, especially in the initial stages of the disease. The most widely known criteria come from the UK Queen Square Brain Bank for Neurological Disorders and the

U.S. National Institute of Neurological Disorders and

Stroke. The Queen Square Brain Bank criteria require slowness of movement (bradykinesia) plus either rigidity, resting tremor, or postural instability. Other probable causes of these symptoms need to be ruled out. Finally, three or more of the following supportive features are required during onset or evolution: unilateral onset, tremor at rest, progression in time, asymmetry of motor symptoms, response to levodopa for at least five years, the clinical course of at least ten years, and appearance of dyskinesias induced by the intake of excessive levodopa.

When PD diagnoses are checked by autopsy, movement disorders experts are found on average to be 79.6% accurate at initial assessment and 83.9% accurate after they have refined their diagnosis at a follow-up examination. When clinical diagnoses performed by nonexperts are checked by autopsy, the average accuracy is 73.8%. Overall, 80.6% of PD diagnoses are accurate, and 82.7% of diagnoses using the Brain Bank criteria are accurate.

A task force of the International Parkinson and Movement Disorder Society (MDS) has proposed diagnostic criteria for Parkinson's disease as well as research criteria for the diagnosis of prodromal disease, but these will require validation against the more established criteria.

Imaging

Computed tomography (CT) scans of people with PD usually appear normal.

MRI has become more accurate in the diagnosis of the disease over time, specifically through iron sensitive T2 and SWI sequences at a magnetic field strength of at least 3T, both of which can demonstrate the absence of the characteristic 'swallow tail' imaging pattern in the dorsolateral substantia nigra.

In a meta-analysis, the absence of this pattern was 98% sensitive and 95% specific for the disease.

Diffusion MRI has shown potential in distinguishing between PD and Parkinson plus syndromes, though its diagnostic value is still under investigation. CT and MRI are also used to rule out other diseases that can be secondary causes of parkinsonism, most commonly encephalitis, and chronic ischemic insults, as well as less frequent entities such as basal ganglia tumors and hydrocephalus.

Dopamine-related activity in the basal ganglia can be directly measured with PET and SPECT scans. A finding of reduced dopamine-related activity in the basal ganglia can rule out drug-induced parkinsonism but reduced basal ganglia dopamine-related activity is seen in both PD and Parkinson-plus disorders so these scans are not reliable in distinguishing PD from other neurodegenerative causes of parkinsonism.

Prevention

Exercise in middle age may reduce the risk of Parkinson's disease later in life.

Caffeine also appears protective with a greater decrease in risk occurring with a larger intake of caffeinated beverages such as coffee.

People who smoke cigarettes or use smokeless tobacco are less likely than non-smokers to develop PD, and the more they have used tobacco, the less

likely they are to develop PD. It is not known what underlies this effect.

Tobacco use may protect against PD, or it may be that an unknown factor both increases the risk of PD and causes an aversion to tobacco or makes it easier to quit using tobacco.

Antioxidants, such as vitamins C and E, have been proposed to protect against the disease, but the results of studies have been contradictory, and no positive effect has been proven. The results regarding fat and fatty acids have been contradictory, with numerous studies reporting protective effects, risk-increasing effects, or no effects.

There have been preliminary indications that the use of anti-inflammatory drugs and calcium channel blockers may be protective.

A 2010 meta-analysis found that nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory drugs (apart from aspirin), have been associated with at least a 15 percent (higher in long-term and regular users) reduction of incidence of the development of Parkinson's disease.

Management

Management of Parkinson's disease

Pharmacological treatment of Parkinson's disease

There is no cure for Parkinson's disease, but medications, surgery, and physical treatment can provide relief and are much more effective than treatments available for other neurological disorders like Alzheimer's disease, motor neuron disease, Parkinson plus syndromes, and multiple sclerosis. The main families of drugs useful for treating motor symptoms are levodopa (always combined with a dopa decarboxylase inhibitor and sometimes also with a COMT inhibitor), dopamine agonists, and MAO-B inhibitors. The stage of the disease and the age at disease onset determine which group is most useful.

Three stages may be distinguished: an initial stage in which the individual with PD has already developed some disability requiring pharmacological treatment, a second stage associated with the development of complications related to levodopa usage, and a third stage when symptoms unrelated to dopamine deficiency or levodopa treatment may predominate.

Treatment in the first stage aims for an optimal tradeoff between symptom control and treatment side effects. The start of levodopa treatment may be postponed by initially using other medications such as MAO-B inhibitors and dopamine agonists instead, in the hope of delaying the onset of complications due to levodopa use.

However, levodopa is still the most effective treatment for the motor symptoms of PD and should not be delayed in patients whose quality of life is

impaired by those symptoms. Levodopa-related dyskinesias correlate more strongly with the duration and severity of the disease than the duration of levodopa treatment, so delaying this therapy may not provide much longer dyskinesia-free time than early use.

In the second stage- the aim is to reduce PD symptoms while controlling fluctuations in the effect of the medication. Sudden withdrawals from medication or overuse must be managed.

When oral medications are not enough to control symptoms, surgery, deep brain stimulation, subcutaneous waking day apomorphine infusion, and enteral dopa pumps can be of use. The third stage presents many challenging problems requiring a variety of treatments for psychiatric symptoms, orthostatic hypotension, bladder dysfunction, etc.

In the final stages of the disease, palliative care is provided to improve the quality of life.

Medications

Levodopa

The motor symptoms of PD are the result of reduced dopamine production in the brain's basal ganglia.

Dopamine does not cross the blood-brain barrier, so it cannot be taken as a medicine to boost the brain's depleted levels of dopamine. However, a precursor of dopamine, levodopa, can pass through to the brain where it is readily converted to dopamine, and administration of levodopa temporarily diminishes the motor symptoms of PD. Levodopa has been the most widely used PD treatment for over 40 years.

Only 5–10% of levodopa crosses the blood-brain barrier. Much of the remainder is metabolized to dopamine elsewhere in the body, causing a variety of side effects including nausea, vomiting, and orthostatic hypotension.

Carbidopa and benserazide are dopa decarboxylase inhibitors that do not cross the blood-brain barrier and inhibit the conversion of levodopa to dopamine outside the brain, reducing side effects and improving the availability of levodopa for passage into the brain. One of these drugs is usually taken along with levodopa, often combined with levodopa in the same pill.

Levodopa use leads in the long term to the development of complications: involuntary movements called dyskinesias, and fluctuations in the effectiveness of the medication.

When fluctuations occur, a person can cycle through phases with good response to medication and reduced PD symptoms ("on" state), and phases with poor response to medication and significant PD symptoms ("off" state.)

Using lower doses of levodopa may reduce the risk and severity of these levodopa-induced complications.

A former strategy to reduce levodopa-related dyskinesia and fluctuations was to withdraw levodopa medication for some time. This is now discouraged since it can bring on dangerous side effects such as neuroleptic malignant syndrome.

Most people with PD will eventually need levodopa and will later develop levodopa-induced fluctuations and dyskinesias.

There are controlled-release versions of levodopa. Older controlled-release levodopa preparations have poor and unreliable absorption and bioavailability and have not demonstrated improved control of PD motor symptoms or a reduction in levodopa-related complications when compared to immediate-release preparations. A newer extended-release levodopa preparation does seem to be more effective in reducing fluctuations but in many patients, problems persist. Intestinal infusions of levodopa

(Duodopa) can result in striking improvements in fluctuations compared to oral levodopa when the fluctuations are due to insufficient uptake caused by gastroparesis. Other oral, longer-acting formulations are under study, and other modes of delivery (inhaled, transdermal) are being developed.

COMT inhibitors

Tolcapone inhibits the activity COMT, an enzyme that degrades dopamine.

It has been used to complement levodopa; however, its usefulness is limited by complications such as liver damage.

A similarly effective drug, entacapone, has not been shown to cause significant alterations of liver function. Licensed preparations of entacapone contain entacapone alone or in combination with carbidopa and levodopa.

Dopamine agonists

Several dopamine agonists that bind to dopamine receptors in the brain have similar effects to levodopa.

These were initially used as a complementary therapy to levodopa for individuals experiencing levodopa complications (on-off fluctuations and dyskinesias); they are now mainly used on their own as the first therapy for the

motor symptoms of PD to delay the initiation of levodopa therapy and so delay the onset of levodopa's complications.

Dopamine agonists include bromocriptine, pergolide, pramipexole, ropinirole, piribedil, cabergoline, apomorphine, and lisuride.

Though dopamine agonists are less effective than levodopa at controlling PD motor symptoms, they are usually effective enough to manage these symptoms in the first years of treatment.

Dyskinesias due to dopamine agonists are rare in younger people who have PD but, along with other complications, become more common with older age at onset.

Thus, dopamine agonists are the preferred initial treatment for younger onset PD, and levodopa is preferred for older onset PD.

Dopamine agonists produce significant, although usually mild, side effects including drowsiness, hallucinations, insomnia, nausea, and constipation.

Sometimes side effects appear even at a minimal clinically effective dose, leading the physician to search for a different drug. Agonists have been related to impulse control disorders (such as compulsive sexual activity, eating, gambling, and shopping) even more strongly than levodopa.

They tend to be more expensive than levodopa.

Apomorphine, a non-orally administered dopamine agonist, may be used to reduce off periods and dyskinesia in late PD.

It is administered by intermittent injections or continuous subcutaneous infusions.

Since secondary effects such as confusion and hallucinations are common, individuals receiving apomorphine treatment should be closely monitored.

Two dopamine agonists are administered through skin patches (lisuride and rotigotine) and are useful for people in the initial stages and to control off states in those in the advanced state.

MAO-B inhibitors

MAO-B inhibitors (safinamide, selegiline, and rasagiline) increase the amount of dopamine in the basal ganglia by inhibiting the activity of monoamine oxidase B (MAO-B), an enzyme that breaks down dopamine.

Like dopamine agonists, their use may delay the commencement of levodopa therapy in early disease, but MAO-B inhibitors produce more adverse effects and are less effective than levodopa at controlling PD motor symptoms. There are few studies of their effectiveness in the advanced stage, although results suggest that they are useful to reduce fluctuations between on and off

periods. An initial study indicated that selegiline in combination with levodopa increased the risk of death, but this was later disproved.

Other drugs

Main article: Antiparkinson medication

Other drugs such as amantadine and anticholinergics may be useful for the treatment of motor symptoms. However, the evidence supporting them lacks quality, so they are not first-choice treatments.

In addition to motor symptoms, PD is accompanied by a diverse range of symptoms. Several drugs have been used to treat some of these problems.

Examples are the use of quetiapine for psychosis, cholinesterase inhibitors for dementia, and modafinil for daytime sleepiness.

Surgery

Placement of an electrode into the brain. The head is stabilized in a frame for stereotactic surgery.

Treating motor symptoms with surgery was once a widespread practice, but since the discovery of levodopa, the number of operations has declined.

Studies in the past few decades have led to great improvements in surgical techniques so that surgery is again being used in people with advanced PD for whom drug therapy is no longer sufficient.

Surgery for PD can be divided into two main groups:

lesional and deep brain stimulation (DBS.) Target areas for DBS or lesions include the thalamus, the globus pallidus, or the subthalamic nucleus.

Deep brain stimulation is the most used surgical treatment, developed in the 1980s by Alim Louis Benabid and others. It involves the implantation of a medical device called a neurostimulator, which sends electrical impulses to specific parts of the brain. DBS is recommended for people who have PD with motor fluctuations and tremors, concerning inadequately controlled by medication, or for those who are intolerant to medication, if they do not have severe neuropsychiatric problems.

Other, less common, surgical therapies involve the intentional formation of lesions to suppress overactivity of specific subcortical areas. For example, pallidotomy involves the surgical destruction of the globus pallidus to control dyskinesia.

Rehabilitation

Further information: Rehabilitation in

Parkinson's disease

Exercise programs are recommended in people with Parkinson's disease.

There is some evidence that speech or mobility problems can improve with rehabilitation, although studies are scarce and of low quality.

Regular physical exercise with or without physical therapy can be beneficial to maintain and improve mobility, flexibility, strength, gait speed, and quality of life.

When an exercise program is performed under the supervision of a physiotherapist, there are more improvements in motor symptoms, mental and emotional functions, daily living activities, and quality of life compared to a self-supervised exercise program at home.

In terms of improving flexibility and range of motion for people experiencing rigidity, generalized relaxation techniques such as gentle rocking has been found to decrease excessive muscle tension.

Other effective techniques to promote relaxation include slow rotational movements of the extremities and trunk, rhythmic initiation, diaphragmatic breathing, and meditation techniques.

As for gait and addressing the challenges associated with disease such as hypokinesia (slowness of movement), shuffling, and decreased arm swing; physiotherapists have a variety of strategies to improve functional mobility and safety. Areas of interest concerning gait during rehabilitation programs focus on but are not limited to improving gait speed, the base of support, stride length, trunk, and arm swing movement. Strategies include utilizing assistive equipment (pole walking and treadmill walking), verbal cueing (manual, visual and auditory), exercises (marching and PNF patterns), and altering environments (surfaces, inputs, open vs. closed.)

Strengthening exercises have shown improvements in strength and motor function for people with primary muscular weakness and weakness related to inactivity with mild to moderate Parkinson's disease.

However, reports show a significant interaction between strength and the time the medications were taken. Therefore, it is recommended that people with PD should perform exercises 45 minutes to one hour after medications when they are at their best.

Also, due to the forward flexed posture, and respiratory dysfunctions in advanced Parkinson's disease, deep diaphragmatic breathing exercises are beneficial in improving chest wall mobility and vital capacity.

Exercise may improve constipation.

One of the most widely practiced treatments for speech disorders associated with Parkinson's disease is the Lee Silverman voice treatment (LSVT.)

Speech therapy and specifically LSVT may improve speech.

Occupational therapy (OT) aims to promote health and quality of life by helping people with the disease to participate in as many of their daily living activities as possible.

There have been few studies on the effectiveness of OT and their quality is poor, although there is some indication that it may improve motor skills and quality of life for the duration of the therapy.

Palliative care

Palliative care is specialized medical care for people with serious illnesses, including Parkinson's. The goal of this specialty is to improve the quality of life for both the person suffering from Parkinson's and the family by providing relief from the symptoms, pain, and stress of sicknesses.

As Parkinson's is not a curable disease, all treatments are focused on slowing decline and improving quality of life and are therefore palliative in nature.

Palliative care should be involved earlier, rather than later in the disease course.

Palliative care specialists can help with physical symptoms, emotional factors such as loss of function and jobs, depression, fear, and existential concerns.

Along with offering emotional support to both the patient and family, palliative care serves a key role in addressing goals of care. People with Parkinson's may have many tough decisions to make as the disease progresses such as wishes for a feeding tube, non-invasive ventilator, and tracheostomy; wishes for or against cardiopulmonary resuscitation; and when to use hospice care.

Palliative care team members can help answer questions and guide people with Parkinson's on these complex and emotional topics to help them make the best decision based on their values.

Other treatments

Muscles and nerves that control the digestive process may be affected by PD, resulting in constipation and gastroparesis (food remaining in the stomach for a longer period than normal.)

A balanced diet, based on periodical nutritional assessments, is recommended, and should be designed to avoid weight loss or gain and minimize the consequences of gastrointestinal dysfunction.

As the disease advances, swallowing difficulties (dysphagia) may appear. In such cases it may be helpful to use thickening agents for liquid intake and an upright posture when eating, both measures reducing the risk of choking. Gastrostomy to deliver food directly into the stomach is possible in severe cases.

Levodopa and proteins use the same transportation system in the intestine and the blood-brain barrier, thereby competing for access.

When they are taken together, this results in reduced effectiveness of the drug.

Therefore, when levodopa is introduced, excessive protein consumption is discouraged, and a well-balanced Mediterranean diet is recommended. In advanced stages, additional intake of low-protein products such as bread or pasta is recommended for similar reasons.

To minimize interaction with proteins, levodopa should be taken 30 minutes before meals.

At the same time, regimens for PD restrict proteins during breakfast and lunch, allowing protein intake in the evening.

Repetitive transcranial magnetic stimulation temporarily improves levodopa-induced dyskinesias.

Its usefulness in PD is an open research topic, although recent studies have shown no effect by rTMS.

Several nutrients have been proposed as treatments; however- there is no evidence that vitamins or food additives improve symptoms. There is no evidence to substantiate that acupuncture and the practice of Qigong, or T'ai chi, have any effect on the course of the disease or symptoms. Further research on the viability of Tai chi for balance or motor skills is necessary.

Fava beans and velvet beans are natural sources of levodopa and are eaten by many people with PD.

While they have shown some effectiveness in has, clinical trials, their intake is not free of risks. Life-threatening adverse reactions have been described, such as the neuroleptic malignant syndrome.

Prognosis

See also: Unified Parkinson's disease rating scale

Global burden of Parkinson's disease, measured in disability-adjusted life years per 100,000 inhabitants in 2004 no data.

< 5 5–12.5 12.5–20 20–27.5 27.5–35 35–42.5

42.5–50 50–57.5 57.5–65 65–72.5

72.5–80

> 80

PD invariably progresses with time. A severity rating method known as the Unified Parkinson's disease rating scale (UPDRS) is the most used metric for a clinical study. A modified version known as the MDSUPDRS is also sometimes used. An older scaling method is known as the Hoehn and Yahr scale (originally published in 1967), and a similar scale known as the Modified Hoehn and Yahr scale, has also been commonly used. The Hoehn and Yahr scale defines five basic stages of progression.

Motor symptoms, if not treated, advance aggressively in the initial stages of the disease and more slowly later. Untreated, individuals are expected to lose independent ambulation after an average of eight years and be bedridden after ten years.

However, it is uncommon to find untreated people nowadays. Medication has improved the prognosis of motor symptoms, while at the same time it is a new source of disability, because of the undesired effects of levodopa after years of use.

In people taking levodopa, the progression time of symptoms to a stage of high dependency from caregivers may be over 15 years. However, it is hard to predict what course the disease will take for a given individual.

Age is the best predictor of disease progression.

The rate of motor decline is greater in those with less impairment at the time of diagnosis, while cognitive impairment is more frequent in those who are over 70 years of age at symptom onset.

Since current therapies improve motor symptoms, disability at present is related to non-motor features of the disease.

Nevertheless, the relationship between disease progression and disability is not linear. Disability is initially related to motor symptoms.

As the disease advances, disability is more related to motor symptoms that do not respond to medication, such as swallowing/speech difficulties, and gait/balance problems; and, to levodopa-induced complications, which appear in up to 50% of individuals after 5 years of levodopa usage.

Finally, after ten years most people with the disease have autonomic disturbances, sleep problems, mood alterations, and cognitive decline.

All these symptoms, especially cognitive decline, increase disability.

The life expectancy of people with PD is reduced.

Mortality ratios are around twice those of unaffected people.

Cognitive decline and dementia, old age at onset, a more advanced disease state, and the presence of swallowing problems are all mortality risk factors. On the other hand, a disease pattern characterized by tremor, as opposed to rigidity, predicts an improved survival.

Death from aspiration pneumonia is twice as common in individuals with PD as in the healthy population.

In 2013 PD resulted in about 103,000 deaths globally, up from 44,000 deaths in 1990.

The death rate increased from an average of

1.5 to 1.8 per 100,000 during that time.

Epidemiology

Deaths from Parkinson disease per million persons in 2012

0-1

2-4

5-6

7-8

9-10

11-12

13-17

18-36

37-62

63-109

Parkinson disease AKA 'PD'

PD is the second most common neurodegenerative disorder after Alzheimer's disease and affects approximately seven million people globally and one million people in the United States.

The proportion of the population at a given time is about 0.3% in industrialized countries. PD is more common in the elderly and rates rise from 1% in those over 60 years of age to 4% of the population over 80.

The mean age of onset is around 60 years, although 5–10% of cases, classified as young-onset PD, begin between the ages of 20 and 50.

PD may be less prevalent in those of African and

Asian ancestry, although this finding is disputed. Some studies have proposed that it is more common in men than women, but others failed to detect any differences between the two sexes.

The number of new cases per year of PD is between 8 and 18 per 100,000 person-years.

Many risk factors and protective factors have been proposed, sometimes concerning theories concerning mechanisms of the disease, however, none have been conclusively related to PD by empirical evidence. When epidemiological studies have been carried out to test the relationship between a given factor and PD, they have often been flawed and their results have in some cases been contradictory.

The most frequently replicated relationships are an increased risk of PD in those exposed to pesticides, and a reduced risk in smokers.

History

History of Parkinson's disease

Jean-Martin Charcot, who made important contributions to the understanding of the disease and proposed its current name honoring James Parkinson

Several early sources, including an Egyptian papyrus, an Ayurvedic medical treatise, the Bible, and Galen's writings, describe symptoms resembling those of PD.

After Galen, there are no references unambiguously related to PD until the 17th century, in the 17th and 18th centuries, several authors wrote about elements of the disease, including Sylvius, Gaubius, Hunter, and Chomel.

In 1817 an English doctor, James Parkinson, published his essay reporting six cases of paralysis agitans.[16] *An Essay on the Shaking Palsy* described the characteristic resting tremor, abnormal posture and gait, paralysis and diminished muscle strength, and the way that the disease progresses over time.

Early neurologists who made further additions to the knowledge of the disease include Trousseau, Gowers, Kinnier Wilson, and Erb, and most notably

Jean-Martin Charcot, whose studies between 1868 and 1881 were a landmark in the understanding of the disease.

Among other advances, he made the distinction between rigidity, weakness, and bradykinesia. He also championed the renaming of the disease in honor of James Parkinson.

In 1912 Frederic Lewy described microscopic particles in affected brains, later named "Lewy bodies."

In 1919 Konstantin Tretiakoff reported that the substantia nigra was the main cerebral structure affected, but this finding was not widely accepted until it was confirmed by further studies published by Rolf Hassler in 1938.[16] The underlying biochemical changes in the brain were identified in the 1950s, due to the work of

Arvid Carlsson on the neurotransmitter dopamine and Oleh Hornykiewicz on its role on PD. In 1997, alpha-synuclein was found to be the main component of Lewy bodies by Spillantini, Trojanowski, Goedert, and others.

Anticholinergics and surgery (lesioning of the corticospinal pathway or some of the basal ganglia structures) were the only treatments until the arrival of levodopa, which reduced their use dramatically.

Levodopa was first synthesized in 1911 by Casimir Funk, but it received little attention until the mid-20th century. It entered clinical practice in 1967 and brought about a revolution in the management of PD.

By the late 1980's deep brain stimulation introduced by Alim Louis Benabid and colleagues at Grenoble, France, emerged as a treatment.

Society and culture

Cost

"Parkinson's awareness" logo with red tulip symbol.

The costs of PD to society are high, but precise calculations are difficult due to methodological issues in research and differences between countries.

The annual cost in the UK is estimated to be between 449 million and 3.3 billion pounds (about 1496853600 kg), while the cost per patient per year in the U.S. is around \$10,000 and the total burden around 23 billion dollars (about \$71 per person in the US).

The largest share of direct cost comes from inpatient care and nursing homes, while the share coming from medication is lower.

Indirect costs are high, due to reduced productivity and the burden on caregivers.

In addition to economic costs, PD reduces the quality of life of those with the disease and their caregivers.

Advocacy

11 April, the birthday of James Parkinson, has been designated as World Parkinson's Day.

A red tulip was chosen by international organizations as the symbol of the disease in 2005: it represents the James Parkinson Tulip cultivar, registered in 1981 by a Dutch horticulturist.

Advocacy organizations include the National Parkinson Foundation, which has provided more than \$180 million in care, research, and support services since 1982, Parkinson's Disease Foundation, which has distributed more than \$115 million for research and \$50 million for education and advocacy programs since its founding in

1957 by William Black; the American Parkinson Disease Association, founded in 1961; and the European Parkinson's Disease Association, founded in 1992.

Notable cases

Main article: List of people diagnosed with

Parkinson's disease

Muhammad Ali at the World Economic Forum in Davos, at the age of 64. He had shown signs of parkinsonism from the age of 38 until his death.

Actor Michael J. Fox has PD and has increased public awareness of the disease.

After diagnosis, Fox embraced his Parkinson's in television roles, sometimes acting without medication, to further illustrate the effects of the condition. He has written two autobiographies in which his fight against the disease plays a key role and appeared before the United States Congress without medication to illustrate the effects of the disease.

The Michael J. Fox Foundation aims to develop a cure for Parkinson's disease.

Fox received an honorary doctorate in medicine from Karolinska Institute for his contributions to research in Parkinson's disease.

Professional cyclist and Olympic medalist

Davis Phinney, who was diagnosed with young onset

Parkinson, at age 40, started the Davis Phinney Foundation in 2004 to support Parkinson's research, focusing on the quality of life for people with the disease.

Boxer Muhammad Ali showed signs of Parkinson's when he was 38, but was not diagnosed until he was 42, and has been called the "world's most famous Parkinson's patient."

Whether he had PD or parkinsonism related to boxing is unresolved.

Research

See also: Parkinson's disease clinical research

There is little prospect of significant new PD treatments shortly.

Currently, active research directions include the search for new animal models of the disease and studies of the potential usefulness of gene therapy, stem cell transplants, and neuroprotective agents.

Animal models

PD is not known to occur naturally in any species other than humans, although animal models which show some features of the disease are used in research. The appearance of parkinsonism in a group of drug addicts in the early 1980's who consumed a contaminated batch of the synthetic opiate MPPP led to the discovery of the chemical MPTP as an agent that causes parkinsonism in non-human primates as well as in humans.

Other predominant toxin-based models employ the insecticide rotenone, the herbicide paraquat, and the fungicide maneb.

Models based on toxins are mostly used in primates. Transgenic rodent models that replicate various aspects of PD have been developed.

Using the neurotoxin 6-hydroxydopamine, also known as 6-OHDA, it creates a model of Parkinson's disease in rats by targeting and destroying dopaminergic neurons in the nigrostriatal pathway when injected into the substantia nigra.

Gene therapy

Gene therapies typically involve the use of a noninfectious virus, i.e., a viral vector such as the adeno associated virus, to shuttle genetic material into a part of the brain.

The gene used leads to the production of an enzyme that helps to manage PD symptoms or protects the brain from further damage.

In 2010 there were four clinical trials using gene therapy in PD.

There have not been important adverse effects in these trials although the clinical usefulness of gene therapy is still unknown.

One of these reported positive results in 2011, but the company filed for bankruptcy in March 2012.

Neuroprotective treatments

Several chemical compounds, such as GDNF (chemical structure pictured) have been proposed as neuroprotectors in PD, but their effectiveness has not been proven.

Investigations on neuroprotection are at the forefront of PD research. Several molecules have been proposed as potential treatments.

However, none of them have been conclusively demonstrated to reduce degeneration.

Agents currently under investigation include antiapoptotic (omigapil, CEP-1347), antiglutamatergic, monoamine oxidase inhibitors (selegiline, rasagiline), pro mitochondrial (coenzyme Q10, creatine), calcium channel blockers (isradipine), and growth factors (GDNF.)

Preclinical research also targets alpha-synuclein.

A vaccine that primes the human immune system to destroy alpha-synuclein, PD01A (developed by an Austrian company, Affiris), has entered clinical trials in humans.

Neural transplantation

Since early in the 1980s, fetal, porcine, carotid, or retinal tissues have been used in cell transplants, in which dissociated cells are injected into the

substantia nigra in the hope that they will incorporate themselves into the brain in a way that replaces the dopamine-producing cells that have been lost.

Although there was initial evidence of mesencephalic dopamine-producing cell transplants being beneficial, double-blind trials to date indicate that cell transplants produce no long-term benefit.

An additional significant problem was the excess release of dopamine by the transplanted tissue, leading to dystonias.

Stem cell transplants are a recent research target because stem cells are easy to manipulate and stem cells transplanted into the brains of rodents and monkeys have been found to survive and reduce behavioral abnormalities.

Nevertheless, the use of fetal stem cells is controversial.

It has been proposed that effective treatments may be developed less controversially using induced pluripotent stem cells taken from adults.

Combination ADHD-

If you have the combination type, it means that your symptoms do not exclusively fall within the inattention or hyperactive-impulsive behavior. Instead, a combination of symptoms from both categories is exhibited.

Most people, with or without ADHD, experience some degree of inattentive or impulsive behavior. But it is more severe in people with ADHD. The behavior occurs more often and interferes with how you function at home, school, work, and in social situations.

The National Institute of Mental Health explains that most children have a combination type

ADHD. The most common symptom in preschool-age children is hyperactivity. I sat here and ran PD, Parkinson's, and the symptoms- with ADHD, and would say they are the same things in the mind. And as the child ages with ADHD may have an elevated risk for Parkinson's.

And then I investigated Lou Gehrig's disease, which was the other that I had many questions about. As that child ages in some cases of Autism, you may see this... A nervous system disease that weakens muscles and impacts physical function. So, the question I ask- Is autism really Lou Gehrig's disease? Take someone with autism they have difficulty moving their mouth and positions up the mouth which could be a result of Lou Gehrig's disease making muscle weakness in the mouth, or ALS. A child with autism has poor mobility and movement and lack of social skills, so really- Autism is just early signs and symptoms of what could be diagnosed as a less Lou Gehrig's disease. In different variations of multiple sclerosis.

In this disease, nerve cells break down, which reduces functionality in the muscles they supply. The cause is unknown. The main symptom is muscle weakness. Medication and therapy can slow ALS and reduce discomfort, but there is no cure. As there is no for Autism which is the earliest sign of in my opinion- Lou Gehrig's disease in children, or Shades of multiple sclerosis.

And I will give why Requires a medical diagnosis the main symptom is muscle weakness and now we can see that when a child has missed due dates of developments, walking, talking, and even clawing.

People may experience:

Muscular: muscle weakness, problems with coordination, stiff muscles, loss of muscle, muscle spasms, or overactive reflexes.

Speech: difficulty speaking or vocal cord spasm-

Whole-body: fatigue or feeling faint.

Also- common: difficulty swallowing, drooling, lack of restraint, mild cognitive impairment, severe constipation, severe unintentional weight loss, shortness of breath, or difficulty raising the foot.

Autism and older life Lou Gehrig's disease to me might be the same thing.

(The ABC's of understanding.)

Interdiction

1 Asexuality bullying is a real thing or not?

- to me, Asexuality of not feeling is not.

What do they call it- Asexuality is the lack of sexual attraction to anyone or low/ absent interest in or desire for sexual activity? It may be considered the lack of sexual orientation, or one of the variations thereof, alongside heterosexuality, homosexuality, and bisexuality. This can answer why you may feel this way.

Not what I say- and therefore:

I feel that there must be some sociological explanations- (love loss- or hopelessness or something in the realm of things,) as to the why, of why someone would place themselves in this grouping.

Asexuality-

- is a sexual orientation, which means an individual feels no sexual attraction to people of any gender.

Yah- NO!

There must be a- why!

However, a person who identifies as asexual can still choose to have sex, can still love, can still be involved with a romantic partner, or get married, and can still engage in normal relationships.

What?

That just contradicted what was said...

No- that would be having a feeling so that would be B-sexual! Or was that dumb... in making that a thing.

A B-sexual- would be someone that has like type 2 diabetes- a person who identifies as non-sexual can still choose to have sex can still love, can still be involved with a romantic partner, or get married, and can still engage in normal relationships. So, I would say being bullied could make you just this.

I would say that being asexual is someone that cannot have- sex nor wants sex... or self-self- ever. And calling yourself this would- say anyone that goes through a time in life where they feel no need in sex more than a 3-week time. More than a year then you would be asexual if your choice to be.

As with any sexual orientation, the label asexual and now C-sexual is a generalization now expand which is my finding on this topic. After thinking it over...

There is- romantic- Asexuality- NOT A Thing- where the couple does not have sex any longer- I would say that you need to find what you are looking for move on- this is not a real thing- you love one another at one point you just feel out of love or need time.

The A B C's-

Explained... who identifies, or

I identify- and in what ways. They say- I say...

Now it can- A- by picking.

C- sexual not by picking.

Type- A

So, that would Be- Type- A (I want to be) All humans are unique and individual, and sexual orientation exists on a spectrum of needs, desires, interests, and attractions.

Type- B (Gray) asexual means that a person experiences sexual attraction, but either not very often or only to a minimal extent.

Type- C (Bullied) is said to be when you are not, over become undateable. (Words of others...)

C- the new type of my findings is:

- The one can be placed down on you by someone saying that you are- even if not so. What do you do- live with suck it up and deal with it- some do... and that is what I call Bullying asexually... having to live with some calling you gay, slander your name till your updateable- or have no self-worth- or something like that when not so.

Type- D (trust) (Demi-sexual) describes a person who only feels sexual attraction to people with whom a close emotional bond has been formed.

So, in saying this you are not asexual you have silly trust issues!

They say- 'Asexuality does not describe what a person chooses to do, but how a person feels. Asexual people have emotional needs, feel attraction to others, and can even feel arousal: they just do not feel sexual attraction.'

What? It has everything to do with what your choice to do... if it is what you must live with... like type C.

They- Many asexual people still identify as lesbian, gay, straight, bisexual, or pansexual- (attracted to people of any gender or sexual orientation) as well.

What about age- is there something to be said about this... be so- if you like a 10 year- and know it is wrong... would say you are a-asexual over the

fact you did not have her in your bed last night. No- you just can have her- for example.

A lot of this can be fixed by having trust in the right one- or finding what is lost in your life... or having someone that can hear you.

...I make this more about being turned off by others more than a sex thing.

You become gay over the fact... that you can trust in the other to have sex or to find love.

Bi for you not sure- if you can, or just want to see what it is like. Bi (same-sex lust/love) (is something, you grow out of it.)

I would say in the nicest way possible to you all grow up and find what you are looking for and stop trying so hard not to be loved.

(Until you love yourself you can have another.)

Gay's-

Good for them- why should I care! That is not being Asexual or Type A!

Food for thought-

Gay- shut up! I- we- us- those around you, do not care- be if- you do not need to have paper- saying you are- or not- be it and stop moving for an out of something that we should not care to know- to extremes.

Just a thought- I- we- the world everyone is sick of this also- what is the world going to be like, if my little girl asks me, daddy should I fall in love with a child- and she 14, what do I say to her? (When are her schools teaching her to love the same sex?) If you can marry both... what is right and wrong with this pitcher.

Do not take this the wrong way, I have nothing to say to the gays, I have known some, and have a friendship with them... it is just making a point.

They say-Asexuality is different from having a low libido, which can be caused by medical or health issues, nor is it the same as repressing one's sexual desires.

No, but you can get low libido over bullying, so I would say that is not so.

In type C - I would say you could. Bullying can lead to more psychological issues.

They say- Differentiate asexuality from abstinence and celibacy. Abstinence is the deliberate choice to refrain from sexual activity, while

celibacy is the deliberate choice to refrain from sexual activity and marriage (or marriage-like relationships.)

These choices may be made for religious, philosophical, moral, or other reasons. Asexuality is a lack of sexual attraction, but not necessarily a lack of sexual appetite (libido.) This means asexual people can be:

Abstinent or celibate.

Sexually active through masturbation.

Sexually active with partners.

Learn what asexuality is not.

Asexuality is a sexual orientation that is distinct from heterosexuality, homosexuality, bisexuality, pansexuality, and other orientations. However, asexuality also has nothing to do with biological sex, gender identity, or gender expression.

...And being asexual does not mean you are aromantic, which means a person feels no romantic attraction to others.

Recognize that there are diverse types of relationships. Just as there are friendships, mother-daughter relationships, father-son relationships, and innumerable other types of platonic (non-sensual) relationships, so too are there

many types of romantic relationships aside from just sexual romantic relationships. Dating an asexual person may open your eyes to new types of relationships, which could include:

Romantic non-sexual relationships, which often involve physical affection, cuddling, and commitment.

Aromantic non-sexual relationships, which involve a deep commitment to one another. While these relationships can include physical affection, there is no sexual or romantic element.

So, I fixed what this said... by the ABCs.

Communicate openly...

Regardless of the circumstances,

Dating is always about getting to know

someone better and dating someone who identifies as asexual is no different.

The key to any relationship is free and open communication. It is important to discuss personal boundaries early in any relationship so that partners know what is acceptable, what is unacceptable, and what is and is not

expected of each other. If you are unsure of something, it is always best to just ask!

It is important not to be offended if someone you are dating comes out to you as asexual. It is not an excuse, and it is not an attempt to get out of the relationship. That person is just trying to be honest and open.

Understand that an asexual person can be intimate. Asexual people often partake in romantic partnerships or relationships, but whether a person is open to physical or sexual intimacy depends on the individual. But dating does not necessarily require physical or sexual interaction, and two people can develop a strong emotional or romantic relationship with or without a sexual element: intimacy is much more than just physical touching or sexual activity.

An asexual partner may or may not be open to sexual activity, A, C- would have a trust issue- and say no. over something like fear, terror, anxiety- over something like bullying.

They said- so it is important to communicate so that everyone involved is on the same page. Feeling sexual pleasure is different from feeling sexual attraction, and some asexual people can enjoy sex.

Conversely, some asexual people are not interested in sex at all and will not be open to exploring a sexual relationship.

Do not expect an asexual person to change... Asexuality is not a choice or preference any more than heterosexuality and homosexuality are. Asexuality is not a problem or disorder, and it is not caused by abuse or violence. People who identify as asexual do not need to be fixed and are not going to change based on the person with whom they are in a relationship.

Some people who are asexual are not interested in romantic relationships and may just be open to close friendships or non-sexual romantic relationships.

2

I give my thoughts-

Why- is no one what to be with you, would be one- let us say in your town or city- it could just be them not you.

...You know who you are and what you are-

3

Like in orientation.

Gay or taken or so one- should not even matter- I am sick of hearing this... then does that me Asexual have a place sure-

I would say- yes, but by only not a choice to be such.

If it is saying: you do not want to have or feel love, then I would say,
that is complete crap, we all need to feel needed. but what if you can feel, all
those things, then

this you:

Asexual not by choice-

What? Yes, this is the real thing-

Asexual not by choice-

4

First- it is things you have or have not done to someone over the
years...

Asexuality- is without sexual feelings or associations with a boy or
girl. Is that just not sounding dumb to you it is to me? You can have a feeling for
a pen- no- so you must feel someone for a bob or jean next to you... or you are
dead. (Even if they are not making you happy in the undies!)

‘She rested her hand on the back of his head, in a maternal, wholly
asexual, gesture’

Would I say this needs an update to know?

We all feel we must make a breathing human- know?

Food- Water- Love-

Is what makes us feel alive?

I would say something is missing from this, something that a load of people turns their heads to. And that others make you feel and act in a sentient way.

Who I am- or what I am- should it matter these days with- love is love...?

...Is it?

I would say not...

5

Why...?

Asexuality Bullying- you become this when someone has slandered you to the point you cannot find someone willing to date you.

In a study that I have done in the 5 or so years, I have found that this to be a real thing.

A lot of this has to do with home life... and how you were raised. Seeing many failed marriages would be one- that I would say would help turn someone- to the point of saying- this is not for me.

Asexuality Cyber Bullying-

- Having someone say something you are not- of having them make you into something you are not.

Would be the other...

Online image- This one is just freaking sweet- I love this having some: dumb sack of shit says if your gay straight or taken.

What they say when you get blocked by them on like some like Facebook- you cannot see it- yet you know it going around about you- someone saying you gay- when you might be the above A B C and so one- not wanting to have a person in your life- but what if you have some saying- your gay to the point they make you become- Asexual, well this one for you.

I found out that one person can make a world of hell, for someone that is not in a click let us say in high school- just by saying- that you something you are not- sexual wrongs- make sexual wrongs.

Popularity- is everything- and this comes as no important thing, to most it makes the world go around in school, I get that... but what if after 10 years or so- you still have- the same things said about you... making me feel Asexual.

What does the photo say? It shows to them what they think of you- what do they see- if someone is making you be what you are not- like being gay or an orientation that you are not.

Orientation is no one's business... other than your own.

Friends- what if this talk made you friendless, all over someone saying the above. This is something- I feel has a lot to do with this, whom you are with says a lot about you- and the one you get to hook up with- if you can.

Take that all away and what do you have- some that have a lake of everything- including sex- life and living-or what I say existing.

A person who has no sexual feelings or desires.

That can be a true thing...

What I think here is that- you start to have this over feeling like what comes up.

Then- if- you- can- why is that you can or cannot be with someone- just over popularity?

What makes your ass- less than some else's?

Why is it there being some out there that can have sex with 5 partners a day and you cannot- nothing is said about them- it is said about you- not doing the same. 1) You do not want to choose.

Not feelings for the boy or girl.

For you have become updateable, by your (people around you) of what is said about you- being made to be what they say- not what you say.

This would only be the case if you do not have a partner.

Rejected Asexuality

Feeling left out-

1.

Dismiss as inadequate, inappropriate, or not to one's taste.

(Would this be you?)

-And why?

What is the why- here?

I would say it is all about what others see in you- self-image- noun:
self-image; plural noun: self-Images-

The idea one has of one's abilities, appearance, and personality. Or just being shot down, so-o many times you do not care anymore to try.

That is nice- not what you see- if you become what they say- and not who you are- as a person.

What do you see when you look at yourself... you can get so low over this- (you start to see what they say and not the real you on the inside.)

Then you start to not care about something as dumb as sex that you could never have- it is just becoming something not to feel- like feeling not alive- if you bullied day in and day out and become unbeatable?

What if you are slandered so badly that you cannot make a move- in life- and I would say yes this can happen- why? Phone, online, others chatting- like people- passing rumors.

Do I have this...?

...And is this why they see me like this?

Self-image is the mental picture, of a kind that is quite resistant to change, that depicts not only details that are potentially available to an objective investigation by others (height, weight, hair color, gender, I.Q. score, etc.)

Also, items that have been learned by that person about themselves, either from subjective experiences or by internalizing the judgments of others.

A simple definition of a person's self-image is their answer to the question: 'What do you believe people think of you?'

Self-image may consist of three types: Self Image resulting from how the individual sees.

Self-image resulting from how others see the individual.

Self-image resulting from how the individual perceives others seeing them in their light and the mental image they give and project.

7

Oh, bullying, negative self-image, discrimination, anxiety, loneliness, and depression, and more. Even as we work to stop negative words, and actions that hurt us, we can strengthen our abilities to cope with tough times, focus on the positive, support the people around us, and reach out for help if we need it-like a hand to hold.

How can you be part of: 'The Love is Louder movement?'

Connect with it. Take actions to support yourself and others. **AND HAVE A VOICE!**

Have a voice

Is a nonprofit alliance for kids and teens- to show your love just hit the like on the page, that feel that their education was unjust, that needs to be re-evaluated by someone outside the schooling systems- being physiologist- or grading- curriculum or the lack of one- or even GPA. Teens and kids, that are in IEP programs, special education, or have been segregated by a schooling team of higher-ups, and feel they need to state why they are above the given IQ said, or grade leaves alleged in the documents, documents, re-evaluated and the leaks of confidentiality, that slur or slander their life, and label them with a stigma, or less than human identifications.

I- Marcel Ray Duriez is the founder, and feel that- education is the thing, that you cannot have enough off, and having other is say that you are not worthy or cannot- or should or mentally inadequate, most not be tolerated, when a child has no say, likewise along with the gardens that are rolled out by staff within an IEP program.

Also, my page is to end this program- or to ask for change, over the fact you- should be equal and have equal rights- like any other student, as said in the constitution- and your school's mission statement, it is your God-given right to be more than someone- on disability- said not to be able, if given after the fact of dropping out... for example. That can be given SAT's or Job's state

assessments- and have been given the education to pass them, and given more than the words of giving up, drop out, and even kill yourself... and told the only place for them is the military table. Also, that you should have more than an unfair sum up of why you are less- then... this page is for kids and teen and parents- with a child to say, they have not to the school's an IEP program be taught to- have an education- over the fact their inferior to those teachers, and other kids, and any or all individuals within their life- that feel superior.

~*~

How to express all your feelings — from the challenges and the hurt to the possibilities and the hope.

And never forget that the opportunities for support, help, and love, are always louder and more powerful than the pain. With your help,

we are getting even louder.

Have a voice:

My quote for a book-

‘The power behind words and voices is substantial to life! This book is dedicated to all of you readers, who did not have a voice at one time.

You are trying to get your voice back. Nonetheless, let us not fail to remember all the voices, which will never speak again.’ ‘Yes, be that voice with this book, this book is for you, to speak up, and be heard.

But what if you cannot-

I would say read some of my other books.

Why?

So, that there are no more lost and forgotten voices of life. This book is a steppingstone to abolish bullying altogether, along with your help; we can take that step forward and forget about the past!’ At this time, I would like you all to take a moment of silence, to remember someone that is no longer with us. So, that they are not forgotten.

Anxiety or the fear of everything and anything- like them or you- being you!

8

Anxiety Asexuality- is not feeling the need to have sex with-self or a partner.

What it is listed as-

A feeling of worry, nervousness, or unease, typically about an imminent event or something with an uncertain outcome.

Sure, worry can make you feel this way- what they say about you makes your day good or just sucks.

Nervousness- what you like about someone you like can make you Asexual, just by being shy. (And this could be for that you do not want to get hurt- or let them get to know you for you-you just may not want to become cheated- you want to you know in your mind to not even go there... (trust) is everything in feeling the feeling of needed others.

You do not want to be the butt of a joke...

They think you are not worthy of them...

Label- classing or classification...

Unease- like what do they see- why is he/she thinking...

To not get yourself into something you cannot get out of- like stalking or harassment. As odd as that sounds it could be something stopping you from having a life- or feeling the need to find love in someone.

This all can make you say I do not even want to bother, and I can even love myself- for I am depressed over not feeling.

Uncertain outcome- best not to go there- is the thought- think with your brain.

Sometimes- you are your own worst enemy.

I feel inferior to everyone-

(Of a person) not confident or assured; uncertain and anxious.

Sure, that can make you say- I do not want to feel for someone or anyone for extended periods in one life.

I would say- that if you are Asexual you would have to go without feeling love or having sex with-self or a partner... for over 3 weeks.

- A study I have done- said the average girl starting at age 10 masturbates 6-10 times a day- with toys.

Why would a person feel inferior to others?

Inferiority starts in childhood when something happens to the child that makes him believe that he is less worthy than others.

Popularity- this starts young where you are placed in schooling and by your peers.

They have the cool friends you do not have, the charming lives you do...

Psychologists have different opinions about the root cause of inferiority; however, all their opinions can be categorized into three major cases:

Organ inferiority: Where the child is born with a certain defect in his body or face or when the child acquires a certain defect because of an accident.

Parenting: If the parents differentiated between children, showed more love for one of them, or favored the newly born child then this might affect the child who gets less care and makes him believe that he is less worthy (see Birth order and personality.) Also, excessive pampering and neglect can have the same effect, while the first will prevent the child from developing the skills he needs to face life, and so feel inadequate the second will make the child feel worthless directly.

Being different: Differences in color, race, or religion can make the child feel inferior compared to his peers.

Will any child who is different develop inferiority?

9

No that will never happen...

Being different is one element in the formation of inferiority complex but for the child to develop feelings of inferiority, he must be taught to believe that because of being different he is considered less worthy.

Race-

A black child will never feel inferior unless other white children keep bullying him or making fun of him... because he is black.

At this point, the child's mind will learn that black people might be inferior to white people and so the child will develop inferiority complexes.

A handicapped child growing up in an encouraging environment might never develop an inferiority complex because he was never taught that there is a big problem in being handicapped.

Handicapped to what extent, would you say it or not right? The mind would be the above body then no. A child that is a char over not being able to walk would understand this... sorry.

How to stop feeling inferior?

If you feel inferior to everyone, then this is how to get rid of inferior feelings:

Understand your inferiority:

You do not need to be a psychiatrist to do that- because by going through your past you will easily- be able to point out all kinds of abuse you were subjected to as a child.

Understanding the reasons behind your inferiority is a big part of the cure- because you will come to realize- that you are feeling lesser now because of something- that happened years ago and not since you are lower than them.

What they say means jack shit about what you can become!

Fix your beliefs!

As a result of the experience, you were subjected to you must have developed incorrect beliefs about yourself and the world.

For example, ‘if I am not like my friends’ then I am worthless. By questioning these beliefs and fixing your logic until it matches common sense- you will be able to get rid of them...

Understand the psychology of those who abused you: the children who used to bully you did that because they felt insecure and wanted to be in control.

The parents who neglected you might have been suffering from depression and those who made fun of you were feeling inferior and wanted to regain their self-worth by lowering the self-worth of someone else.

How come you allow mentally unstable people to cause you mental instability?

‘He felt a surge of anxiety.’

Synonyms: worry, concern, apprehension, apprehensiveness, uneasiness, unease, fearfulness, fear, disquiet, disquietude, inquietude, perturbation, agitation, angst, misgiving, nervousness, nerves, tension, tenseness; can make a nervous disorder characterized by a state of excessive uneasiness and apprehension, typically with compulsive behavior or panic attacks, or make you feel like you do not want someone caring or to care for them- in any way- not just in sex. Depression-

1.

Feelings of severe despondency and dejection could also make you feel asexual- in this case, due to bullying- or slander of one’s name.

‘Self-doubt creeps in and that swiftly turns to depression-’

Psychiatry-

A mental condition characterized by feelings of severe despondency and dejection, typically also with feelings of inadequacy and guilt, often accompanied by a lack of energy and disturbance of appetite and sleep.

‘She was referred to by a psychiatrist treating her for depression-’

Unhappiness, sadness, melancholy, melancholia, misery, sorrow, woe, gloom, despondency, low spirits, a heavy heart, despair, desolation, hopelessness; this would make you feel like I do not want it!

Upset, tearfulness; also, maybe where you say- I need to see someone about my feelings.

Informal- the dumps, the doldrums, the blues, a funk, a blue funk; dysthymia, seasonal affective disorder, SAD-

‘She seems to be suffering from depression.’

10

Mental- I would say all these types have something to do with a mental, ailment, or off-balance... over some type of abnornement or trust issue.

Kids having Asexuality is not a thing to me... there are kids- Now having Cat teen years is...

Your kids would say they are most- likely over bullying- see some on of perfection. No, the singers, but all the above would apply.

A case- for Parkinson’s maybe-

A couple of thoughts of my own would-be head trauma or these as follows.

Also overworking the mind, and not resting.

Scenes we know nothing about PD and what the cause is, we need to start here, in my mind what could be a starting facture- would be, Lead, Roundup or Glyphosate, Agent Orange Herbicide, and Defoliant Chemical- pesticides- like TURE greed, Sulfur Gas, Sulfur Dioxide, Radon Gas, Asbestos/ Mesothelioma, heavy metals.

Lead poisoning-

Delay in development

Learning difficulties

Irritability

Loss of appetite

Fatigue

Glyphosate (IUPAC name: N-

(phosphonomethyl)glycine) It is used to kill weeds, especially annual broadleaf weeds and grasses that compete with crops.

Sulfur Gas, coal mining shaft, expelling into the air, along with working within the industry. Red Dog coal mining waste sites- that would burn- letting out excessive amounts of sulfur.

Eye irritation -- Symptom Checker

A runny nose -- Symptom Checker

Choking -- Symptom Checker

A cough -- Symptom Checker

Frostbite -- Symptom Checker

Breathing difficulty -- Symptom Checker

Cyanosis -- Symptom Checker

Carless mining sites with homes nearby.

Radon Gas

Early signs and symptoms of lung cancer may include:

A persistent cough.

Coughing up blood.

Wheezing

Shortness of breath

Hoarseness

Chest pain, especially when you cough or laugh.

Frequent infections such as bronchitis and pneumonia.

Common in coaling operations

Asbestos/ Mesothelioma

Heavy Metals

The term heavy metal refers to any

A metallic chemical element that has a high density and is toxic or poisonous at low concentrations. Examples of heavy metals include mercury (Hg), cadmium (Cd), arsenic (As), chromium (Cr), thallium (Tl), and lead (Pb.)

Mercury poisoning is a type of metal

poisoning due to mercury exposure. Symptoms depend upon the type, dose, method, and duration of exposure. They may include muscle weakness, poor coordination, numbness in the hands and feet, skin rashes, anxiety, memory problems, trouble speaking, trouble hearing, or trouble seeing. High-level exposure to methylmercury is known as Minamata disease. Methylmercury exposure in children may result in acrodynia in which the skin becomes pink and peels. Long-term complications may include kidney problems and decreased intelligence. The effects of long-term low-dose exposure to methylmercury are unclear.

And this also shows in someone with PD on the hand's splotches on the hands and pink like a rash and skin peels, some think is old age... yet I feel is something that is linked to another sign. It leads to bruising easily- looking like blood spots, or what looks like bed rash. Mercury to me is a starting indicator with Parkinson's.

Minamata disease is also in my view part of PD. Fish and water- streams, there can be high levels of Mercury, seeping into the water table.

Mercury Poisoning Blood Test

This test measures Mercury levels in the blood. Most people are exposed to lesser amounts of mercury in the environment which does not cause health problems. However, exposure to copious amounts of mercury or chronic exposure over an extended period can result in health complications. One of the most common sources of mercury exposure is through eating certain types of fish or seafood. Mercury exposure can also happen in industrial settings such as those which produce electrical equipment, pharmaceuticals, and some types of chemicals. Symptoms of mercury exposure can include burning in the mouth or lungs, difficulty

breathing, difficulty urinating, increased heart rate, fever, chills, headache, nausea, diarrhea, and abdominal cramps.

Over time, mercury poisoning can affect the lungs, kidneys, and nervous system.

- o This test is typically ordered when a

A person is experiencing symptoms of mercury poisoning or believes they may be at risk of exposure. Mercury testing may be ordered along with a Comprehensive Metabolic Panel (CMP) and Complete Blood Count (CBC) for a more thorough analysis.

- o Blood testing is typically used to

measure exposure to methyl or organic mercury such as that found in seafood. A Urine Mercury test is more appropriate for exposure to inorganic mercury. Please note that although blood testing is not typically used to detect occupational mercury exposure, a reference interval for occupational exposure will be included in the test results.

Mercury blood testing is also included

in a Heavy Metal Profile, I and Heavy Metals Profile

II.

The pursuit of perfection- Overworking the mind, in interviews, or to keep from messing up, or staying perfect in your thought of mind may be taxing on the brain.

Ticking time boom- feelings-

You are not as nice as you want to be.

Your mind is always racing. And there is no stop 'till you crash, making sleep impossible.

You throw yourself a pitiful party. Self-Loathing.

You do not live in the moment. Death or your place in the world.

You are constantly late. Or your time is wasting mine. Or the other way around.

Someone saying you are not able or not worthy of overworking for achievements and expectancies.

Part:

I recall a moment when, as a child, Ava and I clasped each other tightly for a while and I could feel her heart beating like a drum through her chest.

Ava pushed away from me, climbed out of the tub as a child, and held a towel up to her chest, leaving her lush behind so-so bare for me to stare at.

'Come with me - let's go to our room,' she said. And opened the door. I quickly got out of the tub and grabbed my towel and followed her.

Ava glanced back over her shoulder and giggled. 'Do you like what you see?' Dit-elle. 'Don't you get tired of looking at my butt?'

I could not help simply gawk at her butt, regarding these fabulous figures waving and jerking as she walked.

I was told. The linoleum was cold on my skin and looked at me shaking. She got up and stood at my feet. She is playing arm, squeezing, and stretching it, and pushing my small boobs from side to side saying, 'I am older than you, what happened?'

-And-

Then even though part of me wants to soothe her, calm her, convince her there is no reason to act like they-I do not. I just watch as she leaves, making sure the door closes behind her before heading back to the book.

I do not think you ever really fall out of love with someone. I think when you fall in love, like true love, it is love for life. All the rest is just experienced and delusions.

She shrugs, gazing down at the counter as though fascinated by my jewelry on my hand from my newly found man. 'No, um, don't say anything he gave you this?' She takes a deep breath and pulls her shoulders back, trying to summon some of the usual revulsion reserved just for me, but failing miserably after looking at my ring.

I then study her carefully, never-ever having seen her so shy and uncomfortable before-with the ring twisting, eye darting, knee twitching-and knowing it is because of me showing this ring in her face.

'He's not here and this is not final yet,' I mumble, eyes glazing over the flyer advertising her Psychic Development level 1 taking place, thinking how she wasted no time to panic.

'Yes, um, I guess. Anyway, I um-' her I shake my head and start again to calm her. 'Well, I was just wondering if she was here. She gave me a look and pulled a crumpled piece of paper from her pocket and said this note is the end of your life, I have it now, and lays it flat against the glass, smoothing the creases as she peers up at me.

'You mean Naddalin?'

'No, you!'

Years from now just keep this and you will live on.' Sensing the answer without reading her thoughts or touching her skin, just knowing the moment my eyes meet her.

She takes a deep breath, pausing for so long I am about to speak again when she turns. 'There's a guy.' She picks at the hem of her shorts and gazes at me.

She pauses, shoulders hunched, looking small and diminutive without the aid of her bully friend. 'Seriously,' I add. 'You meant to come here. And who knows? I can help see that it is you and I that should be.' Yet you are forgetting something we cannot do this, your family, and even bloodline to me.

I watch as she turns, her aura glowing a tremulous grayish as she heads for the door. And even though I do not want to do it, even though I have a potentially life-changing, problem-solving book to return to, I say, 'It's not a mistake.'

My mind wanders to the book I was making at this in the backpack, the one page I left on for this moment, the one- I need to return to at once to keep the impression of the time fresh in my mind, hoping whatever it is that I want can be handled quickly and easily in the penning of my thoughts.

The second she sees me she gasps when I start writing down my day remembrances, jaw-dropping, eyes widening, appearing almost frightened? The two of us gape at each other, wondering how to move past the shocking moments.

I turn the page, eager to find the right one, just as the signal on the cable car door rings and I peer at the informant to verify this.

Unwilling to budge until I am sure they are not going to turn right around and leave, that they are deeply committed to us staying until all have moved out.

Then at that moment, we both started watching as the small, slim, black-and-white figure makes her way through the car- me ever so nervously glancing over her shoulder as though expecting to find someone there then it was in my face sucking away time and recollections.

Furthermore, just as I am hoping it will leave and pull me into its mouth, it goes straight for the counter where I am at, places its hands on the glass, and waits submissively.

'Maybe I'm in the wrong place.' it pulls my shoulders in, twisting like a silver ring around my head and around as its cheeks spot face goes glowing bright white. 'I think-' I swallow hard and glances back at the door not even

knowing why I am here, motioning awkwardly as it says you think not, keep not, and do not have the rights to remember your life you wanted to forget, 'I made a mistake in my wishes, so I'm- just going to go I even live Lily behind.'

Yet the moment is here in this book for me to see that shows it is real.

I steady my breath and stare at the cover, calming myself before I attempt to thumb through it. Fingers twitching, touching only the edges of my book, as I peer at a cursive so small it is impossible to decipher, yet it is all there.

I flip to the middle, taking in a fine, detailed sketch of a group of people dancing under a full moon, followed by those of similar people engaged in complex rituals. Fingers hovering above the scratchy old paper and suddenly knowing deep in my bones that there is no mistake to what happened. I was meant to find the book in my hand to remember the lost time.

Just like Naddalin hypnotized my classmates in the past I was just as lost in a moment lost in that moment of the time I was in and put them all under the spell of lost time looking in the pages aglow, all I should do is weave the right incantation to convince myself to divulge the information I need and make sure these books are never lost to me, or my closest! When I get back, I must tell all this to him or let Chiaz Naztherth know all about them in my home.

The bulk of the pages inscribed with all manner of symbols, reminding me of the alchemical journals Naddalin's father used to keep carefully written in code to protect the secrets within. I must give notes on this... and I did at this moment, 'I am going to die.'

Or is it the other way around? Me coming back to life?

Furthermore, since there is only one way to find out, I close my eyes and press my palm to its front, planning to read it in my usual way until I am slammed by a surge of energy so intense, so frenetic, so disorganized it feels as if it is snapping my bones.

I am hiding it all by becoming Naddalin in parts of my story that is what I will do. I lean back on my heels, squinting at the old brass lock- the kind of deterrence designed to keep honest people honest and deter those who do not know how to manipulate energy like I am closing my eyes as I ease the open drawer, only to find a bunch of hanging files that are no longer hanging, an old calculator, and a bunch of old yellowed receipts. About to close it again when I feel the fake bottom underneath.

I am thrown back, sitting in my chair hitting the wall with such force that it leaves a huge bump.

Then it was like the time spent in front of me and I was in my room, then I pick up the papers and throw them aside before lifting the hatch and exposing an old worn tome, bound to leather, its pages rolled up and frayed like old lost parchment, the words Book of Shadows inscribed on his forehead. I place it on the desk in front of me, then I sit there, and I look. Wondering why someone would go to so much trouble hiding the book and from whom?

The distinct remnants of random images still trembling in front of me and knowing well why it was hidden - it is a book of the fallen type of kind, I know that I am one, witches and magic. Fall and incantations. Keeping the powers so powerful would be completely catastrophic in the wrong hands.

Part:

I look at the monitor, making sure Naddalin me in my look to this world at this time, left before taking the seat behind the desk and looking at the pile of crystals.

Knowing the book alone was not enough- they need to be manipulated to be understood. But just as I arrive for a large red rock marked by streaks of yellow, my knee hits against the side of the desk, and my whole body becomes itchy and hot- a sure sign that something needs my attention.

I push the chair back and lean forward, looking under the desk, getting how strong the feel gets the lower I go down. Next feeling until I slipped from my seat and fell to the floor, groping around the source, the tips of my fingers becoming increasingly unbearably hot the second I touch the bottom left drawer.

I catch it between the palms of my hands, its vibrant life pages that surge content through me. The whole book now prints on my brain as I smile and say, 'Believe me, it already has. Turn it in his hands, and looking back when he says, 'He has it all. If a crystal is not in it, it does not exist. It is also loaded with photos so you can identify them. Anyway, he should help,' she adds, throwing it at me.

I look at the shiny heaps of crystals, some of which I recognize from the elixir I made and the amulet I wear to my neck, but most of which are so foreign that they are not even vaguely familiar.

'In any case, it is all self-explanatory. Files must be sorted in alphabetical order. I must do this, and if you could separate them by subject, I need to do that also, that would be great. Oh, and do not bother marking crystals or herbs if you are not familiar with them, you need to remember that also, I would not confuse them. Although if you are familiar- 'I remember when he smiled at me when I said I wanted him to look at my life stories, forehead raised

so that I immediately started scratching his face again to see what his thoughts were.

I swallow hard, pretending not to notice how its vibrant yellow aura goes a little pink around the edges. 'And you know how to protect your aura, if not you need it too. She then squints, her head angled to the side, my strands of golden-brown hair falling halfway from her arm as I focus on my right side of my mind to convey the aura of understanding.

'Um, do you need anything? I say, voice sounding more confident than I feel as if I am really in charge here. Taking in his long dark hair, the recent addition of copper streaks flickering under the lights, realizing that I have never seen him alone until now. Never once has she been confronted, only the two of us, without Emmah or Mireille who are in class or around us on trips like this they have moments like I do of forgetting everything at moments.

I remember feeling transported in the moments of being there, it was awesome, it is great. I am getting up from the ground like being in a dream, almost not yet. Just what I need. I called out; I recall hearing: 'Can I help you?' before I even had a chance to turn the page and see that it was Jewell, a girl in my class I remember.

'Do you have a book of yours or something?

I ask, hoping that she has done so since, I would like to know more about their amazing abilities.

'You know, so I can find a way to sleep with my immortal girlfriend one day - I remember him telling me. So, I can get them all labeled properly. I make an announcement, hoping to appear as a hard worker rather than the motivated slacker that I can be sometimes or so I have heard all my life, that I am. Watch as she drops her surfboard and turns back to her desk with the book with this souvenir in hand, dragging through a bunch of books and retrieving a small, thick, well-worn tome from the bottom of the pile.

'It was a different memory.' I shrug my shoulders. 'You know how to protect my energy given the angel I am. Most people do not.

'But I'm sure we'll get to it later, another moment in my book of life.'

Part:

Are you going to do that? 'Honestly?' laugh, eyes you meet.

Lock our looks, I know they caught me again and caught me looking wondering if it is cute. So, I quickly look away, scratch my arm, mess with my sleeves, anything to get past the moment towards something less awkward. 'Like the way you got your powers when I snuck in?' she asks, smiling in a nice open way, even though her eyes are falling back.

There is a screen in the corner there that is flashing its day towards the far wall, and it is back to work again. 'This, along with the bell at the door, should alert you to anyone who comes while you work again here.'

'This, the bell at the door she rings with it's the sound of the past, the feel of the moments, and the fact that I'm psychic,' I say, trying to sound lighthearted, though my voice is a little shaky, having never fully recovered from embarrassment before. She grabs the board, fingers sweeping the edge as she noses under her arm. 'You get to clean up the place and there is no limit to the rewards that await you. Today the employee of the month, tomorrow-' she shrugs, her fragile far-off forehead and exposes her amazingly cute face.

I nodded, thinking about Naddalin, and seeing what it is to become of Haven before it happens, and certainly seeing lily's point for me in life. Power in the wrong hands is a dangerous thing.

'With knowledge comes power. Since power tends to be corrupt, it believes it is too risky. Although I have no plans to go anywhere near the dark arts, she is convinced they will find their way in, that the lessons I teach will only lead to the hardest, darkest things.'

I swallow hard, unsure what to say, part of me longing to admit, knowing that Chiaz is one of the few who will understand, but the other part

resists - I remember being the only Naddalin who knows my story and I would like to write, and if I would ever reject him in the afterlife, it was for his protection, and I feel I must keep it this way to hide my past for now yet have to understand me and my story.

Chiaz- She looked at me, those newly changing colors for her eyes, now changed to the green sea eyes meeting mine in a way that made my stomach dance. I mean, at one moment he speaks abstractly, he smiles through the papers as if she barely cares about her words, and then everything stops, she looks at me, and time has stopped.

Nevaeh-

(Thoughts)

'I was only born with her, I think.' I raised my shoulder, screaming at the way my voice finally rose. My eyes darted around the room, hoping to avoid the subject as well as her look when I added, 'So-o lost words. Who taught me about things I do not understand?

Look at her, surprised to hear her say that since all the psychics I have met, who, well, are made up of only Eva, but most still think it is something she was born with.

I am thinking of adding some layers to the schedule, psychological development stuff, even throwing in some Wicca as well, trusting me, and we will get a lot of subscriptions if everyone thinks they have a fair chance.

I ask, watching as they head to a very messy office and riffles through a pile of leaves near the edge.

'Sure.' 'Everyone has potential; it is just a matter of developing them. With some come easy, they cannot ignore it if they try, with others- you must dig a little deeper to find it. And you? When did you know?

Psychological readings in my room? Then just as time goes forward, I gap, just stop shy of our classrooms. I nod, staring longingly as my classmates spill through the door, preferring to join them than having to finish what I started yet have no idea where I am at or what test this is or even day or year.

I shook my head, and I narrowed the look as I tried to think of a stinging reply. My thoughts were interrupted by Haven who says, 'You do it again.' She crosses her arms and her gaze between us. 'You know, everything is your weird, unusual pseudo-telepathy.'

This is because you are immortal, she thinks of a schoolchild and feels my thoughts as we walk around the room or sit next to her. But let me remind you that the twins are not alive either, or now therefore you are in my

care; it is my job to save you from harm. Said, the teacher in that moment of explaining.

Miles is the boy of color next to me nods in the room he is only here because the color of his skin being back, to most is the same as mental needs of hate in this town to be trafficked, of imperative needed needs I am in also, fully warmed up to the subject now I understand what I am doing so I dig into the work just to fail.

I overhear- 'First the glove changes, and now the eye color changes, just as the color of the hair has changed?' She is annoyed that I am Naddalin, disappointment tarnishes the teacher's face. 'Oh God, she doesn't think she's different,' 'I have no idea what you want, but man, you are seriously losing your mind. You are not even close to the rock star or anything in this world, you were when you first came to school, as you thought today.'

Moments before the class bell, that is when I thought about it as I sat there remembering the night before last being the girl on his lap and wrapped my legs around his waist. Of course, I then push back and forth naked under my schoolchild skirt, physical, emotional, and spiritual. the level of intimate connection that comes face to face, ('Tantric staring deep into my partner's eyes,) but I can also easily kiss your partner's lips. get into the Lotus Sex

position, was one of the most incentive persons that intrude) sits down with crossed legs.

The receptive partner (the person who is penetrated) then sits on her partner's lap and wraps her legs behind her partner. From here, the incentive partner can maneuver into the partner's vagina.

I dream of Chiaz Naztherth yet is this all in my head too? I felt so embarrassed that my cheeks turned red. He bowed down, picked up a big drop from me, and sucked it out of his mouth. It tasted like wine. so hard that he held his breath. 'Oh, my goodness, you are so sweet! But my dear, I think you must pay more attention in class, but I dreamed of its last night. Not only is what you described impossible, but you must look down.

I looked among us and saw my light. After I got out next to his belly button, I started pouring into his lower abdomen. 'Put the pillow off the chair, lie on the floor and use the pillow as a small bed.' 'I know I am beyond... the neck of your womb. I know I should take a step back, but I cannot, it is so good, I know I am going to be a good dad. I am satisfied with every step.

Then he lowered his hand further and began to caress her belly. When my sperm was poured out, it was still shining in the light, and when his finger passed, it was taken to his mouth to lick it. Then she started to lift her belly,

raised her hands, and saw the most intimate part of it. There is a small bunch of brownish hair on her hill, cut into an inverted triangle that points down at this cute deep pink kitten, with distinctive lips, and it seems full. She wants to swallow yet difficult over the feelings of her vagina, but first, she must take care of it.

'Look, that is what you want. My beautiful kitten as we call it, do you like the look? It is ridiculously cute and weird watching you masturbate and my belly.

She is going to kiss you. She will kiss you.' 'Do you think you can take care of him for me? Can you make this sexy kitten make you say hello? Voice, as soon as I got stupid, the smallest part of my parts showed me my ultimate purpose, and I started getting up again.

He stepped on me, and his fist was still possible in his hand until his foot almost fell under my armpits, and then it started to fall, 'Baby,' she said, extending my tongue. 'She said that when Kitty approached her face, she obeyed happily. Finally, this part stretched the top of my whole body. My ass was on my chest, and her vagina covered my mouth. The clitoris pressed his gentle hot nose, and the moment he touched his tongue, he began licking.

I do not know what to do so I listen to her breathing and her sin if it sucks strongly, angrily, or slightly, and I will focus a little before continuing to discuss other issues. 'Damn, baby, you are so normal! Oh. Over there... Oh yes, those little lips suck, my love... Uh! Are you sure I have never eaten a girl before? Chiaz said.

Hmm- Yes, stick your tongue deeply! Lift the air now! Put your tongue on his clitoris. When he touched my tongue, she cried. It was a little bump in the creases of my skin. I tightened my tongue, waiting for further instructions, I felt my whole-body tense.

When we came, I licked, making sure to move my tongue as much as possible to its small part. The room was incredibly quiet except for the sound I knocked on when she had trouble breathing. Without further instructions, I am a little confused. He likes to suck my lips early, so I want to try it. I tightly tightened all her scarf, as well as the bumps between her lips and her tongue, as if using a piece of fruit, gently absorbing it.

A loud cry was impeding the air, and when I felt something wet, I felt myself trembling. Then his chin relaxed, and all the weight fell on me. When I started slaughtering my face, I jumped violently from my mouth, everything from the clitoris to the rubbing, pulled my lower face screaming.

Finally, after taking control of herself, she left me and leaned back on the chair, he trapped me underneath and held me, I remember when her head was under enormous pressure on me. I did not have time to hold my breath because she grabbed my hair and pulled me until I lived with it.

'He hit me with his love! I need your hand in me while sucking my clitoris! I am so frozen. What am I supposed to do? She pushed me down when she lifted her knee to show me her. I saw that I thought her clitoris was coming out of the hood, but I do not think there is a way to get my hand wherever she wants.

Two fingers can be closed, so I thought about it and let them slide down, and I covered the clitoris with my mouth again. Yes! Suck the clitoris! Your mouth is good! The hands are deeper! I am here! I am close again!

'Carefully blowing the wind, I did what I said and forced Pinkie and Pinkie to be on it. Although it was tight, when it twisted on my hand, I finally started kneading them in a ball. 'That's it! You did an excellent job. Oh, if there are only more people, they will listen - Damn it! Let go of your hands! Hands up, legs up! Feel it - Damn it... There, go on into, clean up many times after! Do not dare stop! Keep sucking, keep fucking! You are going to make me ejaculate! You are going to make your baby in me! That is nothing but true love!

(I remember, mummy screaming.)

‘I do! Yes. I do, in me, I want it!’

When he started playing with his breasts and abdomen, then gently lowered his hand to play with the clitoris, with some hesitation a little, because I did not interrupt the eye contact with me and moaned. Baby, I need you so much that I told him.

Your beautiful girl needs her light to fill you girl! I want your baby, do me hard until my whole body shakes the pattern of indecent. Want to see my back float when it is true?

‘Nevaeh is good. I think we will like these daily meetings after school. We should meet three times a week like this. ‘What is it that is holding us back, ‘you tough again to stand your ground?’

I was with a great man recently but forgot how masculine a young man is until now. I am not a man yet for some, but I know I will be soon. I said calmly.

‘No pill for you,’ of any kind he said to me.

‘Birth and happy-pills for my so-called warranted needs or I lose my public education.’ I questioned.

Part:

My eyes meet the child to come into my mind of the baby girl that is on her way, unsure what she means to me, yet I understand that is everything that is my life now.

By the end of Friday, I was so excited to have a car all week in my life that I was overwhelmed by the fact that I was able to do it. My sisters noticed and did not say anything to me about it. And I went home from school myself. I wonder how I did it in such a state of mind.

We are all the children of our grandmother. In my grandfather's death, it was in his will. They gave each of us an envelope with a \$600 note inside and told us not to spend them all in one place, but I did not get any money. I got the car.

'Yes Pappy' I remember saying far too often, daily, that the car he was earning was no different from every man in my life as a girl.

I am complaining, biting my lip, smiling, lowering his head to the vagina of my little toes, my toes already wrinkled. 'Oh, God, ' I watch and groan quietly as he puts small kisses along the top of her. Along my inner thighs along my then bald lip's pussy. I flop as he pushes my leg wider, I feel his breath against my clitoris. I cannot help but lift my hips and lift my ball to his face. an

evil smile appearing on his lips as he moved his head away. I am complaining as he shakes his head.

(I remember all the times with men)

He would kiss my belly, exceed my breasts, top of my neck, and along my jaw. I am sorry for his name. His lips finally find mine and take all my strength to keep my hands where they are. My back is arched to meet his body, he wants to feel it near me. He suddenly grinds against my naked parts, and I throw my head back and I gasp at the fun. Damn, if he did not have those boxers, he would strangle his face in my neck, and breathe me in as he still grinds. My breathing became louder in his ears.

'Please child- 'I grumble breathy.

'Stop!'

'Stop!'

'STOP!!!'

Then, I feel his teeth on my neck. My hands broke the position and found his back, my nails drilled into his teeth and sank into my skin. I am suggesting to him aloud, 'Damn.' He is licking my neck to soothe his mark.

He stirs his mouth to my ear, 'Oh. When did I tell you could move your hands? I complain when I start begging him.

‘Stop!’

‘Stop!’

‘STOP!!!’

My mind is so shaken by being a shopman, I had to forget not to remember the pain of the past. Then suddenly I flipped over my belly and lifted to stay on the four. I feel like he is putting himself behind me. Damn, what did I do - my thoughts are interrupted as I collapse forward in the surprise of the first tack, and the sound crackling through the air.

‘Count,’ he said to me. He orders, I quickly resume the situation four times. This happens like this in my mind as a young girl. One. Two. Three. Four. Five. Six. Seven. Eight. Nine. I came as his hand met my pink parts, cheek prick edited for the tenth and final time my butt would be in trouble bloodily with pain beaten with a garden hoe for his sick joy.

My skin is on fire as he now gently massages my cheeks. Put a little kiss there. My bread is swinging irregularly as he flips me back on my back. He caresses the side of my face and pushes my falling hair behind my ear. I can see why I have shut off at times with my mind.

He traces his thumb along my lips as he whispers, 'Good girl.' I am complaining about him. I need it more than ever, starting with my body again, and my leg passes with his hands. I feel like my juices are flowing down as I bite my lips. I know he sees her getting into my drenched vagina laughing.

'Like a good girl. Look how wet you are. He takes his finger, runs to my soft slit, and lifts his finger to me, and I open my mouth right away. He is getting his finger and I am closing my mouth, sucking him. My tongue hovers around and I moan in my taste. I watch his jaw stick to the feeling that he is coming out and coming back to it, looking at him, watching his next move. Slowly lick with the full face of his tongue up between my folds and find my clit and suck on it. My hand immediately finds his hair as I tangle my fingers in it, my eyes unclose as my back braces off the bed. I moan as he complains against her, sending vibrations all over my body.

Suddenly, his tongue darts inside me. He fucked my pussy with his tongue as my hands grabbed the bedsheets. 'Fuck!' I grind my hips at the pace he fucks my pussy. My footrests on his back between the blades of his shoulder. I complain about the sudden loss of his tongue from inside me but soon it is replaced by two fingers, his tongue returns to my slightly flickering clitoris. I moan as loudly as my hands reach my breasts, knead them as he pumps his fingers in and out of my pussy. At home and abroad. At home and abroad. His

tongue works my interparty up. My toes start to curl, and I can feel that fashionable feeling building in the hole of my stomach.

'My baby.' Hand back to his hair and I towed it lightly, his fingers working faster and faster. At home and abroad. At home and abroad. 'Oh my God, I'm going to daddy!' I squeaked aloud. 'Don't stop, don't stop fucking.' I am complaining as my leg starts to vibrate.

Suddenly, he curls his fingers inside me, hitting that spot that drives me completely insane at the same time he sucks on my clitoris.

My body explodes in an orgasm, screaming by his name as I lift my back out of bed, my body trembling and convulsing under his spell. My legs start to try to close, and my pussy sensitivity is almost unbearable as he still attacks her beautifully, and his hands push my legs away, fingers digging in my thighs. Hungry to think.

Then in a rip of time I was back in the class, I wondered why my history document had been a failure with a big red 'F' on it.

-And-

Then, I read the statement that it was not asked of you to do 'it is too long when all I had to do was write a short answer not a book or Diarrhea of

run-ons like Feces in and much discharged from in the use of your rambling words run-on's,' that is not quoted.

My mind tears and goes every moment in time as if I were there when authoring this long report from a teacher who thinks I am brain dead, in a class I wrote this to show what I could do.

'Reread it, and let see, if you understand what you are, and why you think the way you do about someone like me.'

Nevaeh Mai Natalie

Friday, March 7, 2008

Pearl Harbor is a lagoon port on the island of Oahu, Hawaii, west of Honolulu. Much of the harbor and surrounding land is a deep-water naval base of the United States Navy. It is also the headquarters of the U.S. Pacific Fleet. The U.S. government obtained for the first time the exclusive use of the entrance and the right to maintain a repair and coal station for ships here in 1887. The attack on Pearl Harbor by the Empire of Japan on December 7,

1941 was the immediate cause of the United States' entry into World War II. Ford Island is one of the central landmarks.

The Arizona Memorial is the small white dot on the left side above Ford Island... Pearl Harbor was originally a vast shallow embayment called

Wai Momi (meaning 'Pearl Waters') or Pu'uloa (meaning 'long hill') by Hawaiians. Pu'uloa was considered the home of the shark goddess, Ka'ahupahau, and his brother (or son,) Kahiuka, in Hawaiian legends. According to tradition, Keaunui, the leader of the powerful Ewa chiefs, is credited with cutting a navigable channel near the present-day pu'uloa saline, by which he made the estuary, known as the 'Pearl River,' accessible for navigation. Considering the legendary amplification, the estuary already had an outlet for its waters where the current gap is; but Keaunui is credited with expanding and deepening it.

At the beginning of the 19th century...

Pearl Harbor was not used for large ships because of its shallow entrance. U.S. interest in the Hawaiian Islands has increased due to its whaling, maritime and commercial activity in the Pacific. As early as 1820, a 'U.S. Trade and Sailors' Agent' was appointed to handle American affairs in the port of Honolulu. These trade links with the American continent have been accompanied by the work of the American Council of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. American missionaries and their families have become an integral part of the Hawaiian political body.

Throughout the 1820s and 1830s, many American warships visited Honolulu. In most cases, commanders carried letters from the U.S. government

advising on government affairs and the island nation's relations with foreign powers. In 1841, the newspaper *Polynesian*, printed in Honolulu, advocated that the United States establish a naval base in Hawaii to protect U.S. citizens engaged in the whaling industry. The British Foreign Secretary of Hawaii Robert Crichton Wyllie remarked in 1840 that... My view is that the flood of events is rushing towards annexation to the United States. From the end of the civil war to the purchase of Alaska, the increased importance of the Pacific states, the projected trade with the East, and the desire for a tax-free market for Hawaiian commodities, Hawaiian trade has increased. In 1865, the North Pacific Squadron was formed to embrace the West Coast and Hawaii.

Lackawanna in the following year was assigned to cruise between the islands, a locality of great interest and growing importance.' The ship surveyed the northwest Hawaiian Islands towards Japan. As a result, the United States claimed Midway Island.

The Secretary of the Navy was able to write in his 1868 annual report that in November 1867, 42 American flags flew over whalers and merchant ships in Honolulu to only six other nations. This increased activity resulted in the permanent deployment of at least one warship in Hawaiian waters. He also praised Midway Island as having a port beyond Honolulu. The following year,

Congress approved a \$50,000 credit on March 1, 1869, to deepen the port's approaches.

After 1868, when the commander of the Pacific fleet visited the islands to deal with American interests, naval officers played a key role in domestic affairs. They have been arbitrators in trade disputes, trade agreement negotiators, and public policy advocates. Periodic travel between the islands and to the mainland aboard the United States.

Warships were organized for members of the Hawaiian royal family and important island government officials. When King Lunalilo died in 1873, negotiations were underway for the cessation of Pearl Harbor as a port for duty-free exports to the United States.

(Quote needed) With the election of King Kalakaua in March 1874, riots brought sailors from the USS Tuscarora and Portsmouth to land. The British warship, HMS Tenedos, also landed a symbolic force. During the reign of King, Kalakaua Airbases were granted the exclusive right to enter Pearl Harbor and establish a 'coal and repair station.'

Although this treaty remained in force until August 1898, the United States did not fortify Pearl Harbor as a naval base. The shallow entrance was a

formidable barrier against the use of the protected deep waters of the inland port as it had done for 60 years.

The United States and the Kingdom of Hawaii signed the Treaty of Reciprocity of 1875, supplemented by the Convention on December 6, 1884, the Reciprocity Treaty was concluded by James Carter and ratified in 1887. On January 20, 1887, the U.S. Senate granted the Navy the exclusive right to maintain a coal and repair station at Pearl Harbor. (The United States took possession on November 9 of the same year.) The War of Spain and America of 1898 and the desire of the United States to have a permanent presence in the Pacific both contributed to the decision.

Naval presence (1899-present)

After the overthrow of the Hawaiian Kingdom, the U.S. Navy established a base on the island in 1899. On December 7, 1941, the base was attacked by Imperial Japanese Navy aircraft and dwarf submarines, causing the Americans to enter World War II. One of the main reasons Pearl Harbor occurred is that the United States has experienced significant communication breakdowns between several branches of the U.S. armed services and U.S. government departments.

This led to the Japanese surprise attack at the Hawaiian air base. Even if the U.S. army and naval forces had not been surprised by the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941, they would have been defeated just as decisively. There was no meaningful plan for Hawaii's air defense, as U.S. commanders had no understanding of the capabilities and appropriate use of airpower. As it was, if the Pacific fleet had acted on the war warnings, it would undoubtedly have gone out and been at sea on December 7, where the large ships would have been sunk in deep water, making rescue impossible. Shortly after Japan's devastating surprise attack on the two American military commanders at Pearl Harbor, Lieutenant-General Walter Short and Admiral Mari Kimmel were demoted from their ranks. The two American commanders are now seeking to restore their reputation and full ranks.

After the Second World War

Over the years, Pearl Harbor remained a major base for the U.S. Pacific Fleet after World War II with the San Diego Naval Base. In 2010, the Navy and Air Force merged their two neighboring bases; Pearl Harbor joined Hickam Air Force Base to create Joint Base Pearl Harbor-Hickam.

The Waffen-SS was established as an armed wing of the Schutzstaffel (SS, 'Protection Squadron' of the Nazi Party. Its military formations included

men from Nazi Germany, as well as volunteers and conscripts from occupied and unoccupied lands.

The Waffen-SS grew from three regiments to more than 38 divisions during World War II, and served alongside the Heer (regular army), but was never formally a part of it. Adolf Hitler opposed the integration of the Waffen-SS into the army, as he was destined to remain the armed wing of the Party and become an elite police force once the war was won. Before the war, it was under the control of the SS Führungshauptamt (SS operational command office) under reichsführer-SS Heinrich Himmler. During the mobilization, tactical control was given to the High Command of the Armed Forces

(Supreme Command of the Wehrmacht.)

Initially, membership was only open to German origin 'Aryan,' which was said to be the Herrenvolk (master race,) according to The Nazi racial ideology. The rules were partially relaxed in 1940, although groups considered by the Nazis as 'subhuman' such as ethnic Poles or Jews remained excluded. Hitler authorized the formation of units composed largely or exclusively of foreign volunteers and conscripts. The foreign SS units were made up of men in Albania, Armenia, Azerbaijan, Belarus, Belgium (Wallonia and Flanders), Bulgaria,

Denmark, Estonia, Finland, France, Galicia, Georgia, Hungary, India, Ireland, Italy, Latvia, Lithuania, Luxembourg, Netherlands, Norway, Romania, Russia (including Cossack and Tatar, Turkish republics SSR,) Slovakia, Slovenia, Spain, Sweden, Ukraine, the independent state of Croatia, Asian Regiment, Arab Regiment, United States (15-20 volunteers), and a small number of British troops.

During the post-war trials in Nuremberg, the Waffen-SS was convicted as a criminal organization because of its links to the Nazi party and its involvement in numerous war crimes. Waffen-SS veterans were denied many of the rights granted to veterans who had served in the Heer (Army), Luftwaffe (Air Force), or Kriegsmarine (Navy.) An exception was made for Waffen-s conscripts sworn after 1943, who were exempted because of their involuntary servitude.

The Hitler Youth (About this sound

Hitlerjugend (help info,) often abbreviated to HJ in German) was the youth organization of the Nazi Party in Germany. Its origins date back to 1922. From 1933 to 1945, it was the only official youth organization in Germany and was partly a paramilitary organization; it was made up of the own Hitler Jugend for young men aged 14 to 18, the Deutsches Jungvolk (German youth) for young boys, and the German Girls League.

The Hitler family includes the parents and ancestors of Adolf Hitler (April 20, 1889 - April 30, 1945), a German politician of Austrian descent and the leader of the National Socialist Party of German Workers (German: Nationalsozialistische Deutsche Arbeiterpartei, abbreviated NSDAP,) commonly known as the Nazi Party. Chancellor of Germany from 1933 to 1945, he was head of state as Führer und Reichskanzler from 1934 to 1945. He is best remembered for his central leadership role in the rise of fascism in Europe, the Second World War, and the Holocaust.

Before the birth of...

Adolf Hitler the surname had many variations, which were often used interchangeably. Some of the common variances were Hitler, Hiedler, Fuller, and Alois Schicklgruber (Adolf's father) changed his name on January 7, 1877, to 'Hitler,' which was the only form of the surname Adolf used.

The family has long been of interest to historians and genealogists because of the sometimes-undisputed fatherhood of Hitler's father, as well as family relationships and their psychological effects on Hitler during his childhood.

With the surrender of Nazi Germany in 1945, the organization de facto ceased to exist. On October 10, 1945, he was banned by the Allied Control

Council along with other Nazi Party organizations. Under Section 86 of the Hitler Youth is an 'unconstitutional organization' and the distribution or public use of its symbols, except for educational or research purposes, is not permitted.

Eva Anna Paula Hitler (née Braun; February 6, 1912, April 30, 1945) was Adolf Hitler's long-time companion and, for less than 40 hours (about 1 and a half days), his wife. Braun met Hitler in Munich when she was 17 while working as an assistant and model for her photographer and began seeing him often about two years later. She attempted suicide twice during their first relationship. In 1936, she was part of her family at the Berghof near Berchtesgaden and lived a sheltered life throughout the Second World War. Braun was a photographer, and many of Hitler's surviving color photographs and films were taken by her. She was a key figure in Hitler's inner social circle but did not attend public events with him until mid-1944 when his sister Gretl married Hermann Fegelein, the SS liaison officer on his staff.

A suicide pill- Cyanide is a pill, capsule, bulb, or tablet containing a deadly toxic substance that a person deliberately ingests to commit suicide quickly. Military and spy organizations have provided their agents in danger of being captured by the enemy with pills and suicide devices that can be used to avoid imminently and much more unpleasant death (such as by torture,) or to ensure that he/she cannot be interrogated and forced to disclose secret

information. As a result, lethal pills have significant psychological value for people on missions with an elevated risk of capture and interrogation. The option of committing suicide in such extreme circumstances is recognized by society as a form of rational suicide

Eva Braun was born in Munich, Eva Braun was the second daughter of Friedrich 'Fritz' Braun and Franziska 'Fanny' Kronberger, who had worked as a tailor before her marriage. Her older sister, Ilse, was born in 1909 and her younger sister, Margarete (Gretl,) was born in 1915. Braun's parents divorced in April 1921, but remarried in November 1922, for financial reasons (hyperinflation afflicted the German economy at the time.))

Braun was educated at a Catholic high school in Munich, then for a year at a business school in the convent of the English Sisters in Simbach am Inn, where she had average grades and a talent for athletics.

At the age of 17, she took a job with Heinrich Hoffmann, the official photographer of the Nazi Party (NSDAP.) Initially employed as a salesperson, she quickly learned to use a camera and develop photos. She met Hitler, 23 years her senior, in Hoffmann's studio in Munich in October 1929. He had been introduced to him as 'Herr Wolff.' Eva's sister, Gretl, also worked for Hoffman from 1932, and the women rented an apartment together for a while. Gretl accompanied his sister on his last trips with Hitler to Obersalzberg.

Relationship with Hitler

Hitler lived with his half-niece, Geli Raubal, in an apartment in Prinzregentenplatz 16 in Munich from 1929 until his death. On September 18, 1931, Raubal was found dead in the apartment, shot with Hitler's gun, an apparent suicide. Hitler was in Nuremberg at the time. The relationship was important to him, the most intense of his life. Hitler began to see more of Braun after the suicide.

Braun herself attempted suicide on August 10 or 11, 1932, by shooting herself in the chest with her father's pistol. Historians believe that the attempt was not serious but was an attempt for Hitler's attention. After Braun's recovery, Hitler committed himself to her and by the end of 1932, they had become lovers. She often moved at night to her Munich apartment when he was in town. Braun worked as a photographer for Hoffmann from 1933. This position allowed him to travel—accompanied by Hoffmann—with Hitler's entourage, as a photographer for the Nazi Party. Later in her career, she worked for Hoffman's art press.

According to a fragment of his diary and the account of biographer Nerin Gun, Braun's second suicide attempt occurred in May 1935. She took an overdose of sleeping pills when Hitler failed to take time for herself in her life. Hitler supplied Eva and his sister with a three-bedroom apartment in Munich in August, and the following year the sisters were supplied with a villa in

Bogenhausen to Wasserburger Str. 12 (now Delp Str. 12.) In 1936, Braun was at Hitler's house at the Berghof near Berchtesgaden whenever he was in residence, but she lived mostly in Munich. Braun also had his apartment at the new Reich Chancellery in Berlin, completed with a design by Albert Speer.

Braun first attended the Nuremberg Gathering in 1935 as a member of Hoffman's staff.

Hitler's half-sister, Angela Raubal (the mother of the dead Geli), opposed her presence there and was later dismissed as a housekeeper at her house in Berchtesgaden. Researchers are unable to determine whether his dislike for Braun was the only reason for his departure, but other members of Hitler's entourage saw Braun as untouchable from there.

Hitler wanted to present himself as a chaste hero; in Nazi ideology, men were political leaders and warriors, and women were stay-at-home spouses. He believed that he was sexually attracted to women and wanted to exploit it for political purposes by remaining single because he felt that marriage would diminish its appeal. He and Braun never appeared as a couple in public; the only time they appeared together in a published news photo was when she was sitting next to him in the winter of 1936 Olympics. The German people were not aware of Braun's relationship with Hitler until after the war. According to Speer's memoirs, Braun never slept in the same room as Hitler and had his rooms at the

Berghof, in the Hitler residence in Berlin, and the Berlin bunker. Speer later said, 'Eva Braun will prove a great disappointment to historians.'

Adolf Hitler (April 20, 1889-April 30, 1945) was a German politician of Austrian descent who was the leader of the Nazi Party (NSDAP), Chancellor of Germany from 1933 to 1945, and Fuhrer ('leader') of Nazi Germany from 1934 to 1945. He was the dictator of Nazi Germany and was at the center of World War II in Europe and the Holocaust.

Hitler was a decorated veteran of the First World War. He joined the forerunner of the NSDAP, the Workers' Party in 1919 and became head of the

NSDAP in 1921. In 1923, he attempted a coup d'etat Munich to take power. The failed coup led to Hitler's imprisonment, during which he dictated his autobiography and political manifesto *Mein Kampf* ('My struggle.') After his liberation in 1924, Hitler gained popular support by attacking the Treaty of Versailles and promoting nationalism, anti-Semitism, and anti-communism with charismatic oratory and Nazi propaganda. Hitler frequently denounced international capitalism and communism as part of a Jewish conspiracy.

Hitler's Nazi party became the largest elected party in the German Reichstag, leading to his appointment as chancellor in 1933. After new elections won by his coalition, the Reichstag passed the enabling law, which began the

process of transforming the Weimar Republic into Nazi Germany, a one-party dictatorship based on the totalitarian and autocratic ideology of National Socialism. Hitler aimed to eliminate the Jews of Germany and establish a New Order to counter what he saw as the injustice of the post-World War I international order dominated by Great Britain and France. His first six years in power led to rapid economic recovery after the Great Depression, the denunciation of the restrictions imposed on Germany after the First World War, and the annexation of territories home to millions of ethnic Germans—actions that gave him significant popular support.

Hitler sought Lebensraum ('living space') for the German people. Its aggressive foreign policy is the main cause of the outbreak of World War II in Europe. He led large-scale rearmament and, on 1 September 1939, invaded resulting in statements by British Frenchmen and declarations of war on Germany. In June 1941, Hitler ordered an invasion of the Soviet Union. By the end of 1941, German forces and the Powers of the European Axis occupied most of Europe and North Africa. The failure to defeat the Soviets and the entry of the United States into the war forced Germany on the defensive and it suffered a series of increasing defeats. In the final days of the war, at the Battle of Berlin in 1945, Hitler married his longtime lover, Eva Braun. On April 30, 1945, less than

two days later, the two men committed suicide to avoid capture by the Red Army, and their bodies were burned.

Under Hitler's leadership and racially motivated ideology, the Nazi regime was responsible for the genocide of at least 5.5 million Jews and millions of other victims, whom he and his followers regarded as Untermenschen ('subhumans') and socially undesirable. Hitler and the Nazi regime were also responsible for the deaths of some 19.3 million civilians and prisoners of war. Also, 29 million soldiers and civilians died because of military action in the European theatre of the Second World War. The number of civilians killed during World War II was unprecedented in the war and the deadliest conflict in human history.

Biographer Heike Goertmaker notes that women did not play a significant role in the politics of the Third Reich. Braun's political influence on Hitler was minimal. She was never allowed to remain in the room when the business or political conversations took place and was sent out of the room when ministers or other dignitaries were present. She was not a member of the Nazi party. His main interests were sports, clothing, and film. She lived a sheltered, privileged life, and seemed uninterested in politics. One example where she became interested was in 1943, shortly after Germany made the transition to an all-out war economy. This included a potential ban on women's cosmetics and

luxury. According to Speer's memoirs, Braun approached Hitler with 'great indignation'; Hitler quietly ordered Speer, who was Minister of Armament at the time, to stop the production of women's cosmetics and luxury goods rather than institute an outright ban.

Braun continued to work for Hoffmann after beginning his relationship with Hitler. She took many photos and films of members of the inner circle, and some of them were sold to Hoffmann for extremely soaring prices. She received money from Hoffmann's company as late as 1943 and held the post of Hitler's private secretary. This appearance meant that she could enter and exit the Chancery without being marked, although she used a side entrance and a back staircase. He noted that Braun and Hitler enjoyed a normal sex life. Braun's friends and relatives described Eva laughing over a 1938 photograph of Neville Chamberlain sitting on a sofa in Hitler's Munich apartment with the remark: 'If only he knew what was happening on that sofa saw.'

On June 3, 1944, Gretl Braun, Braun's sister, married the SS-Gruppenf-hrer Hermann Fegelein, who was the liaison officer of the Reichsf-hrer-SS Heinrich Himmler in Hitler's service. Hitler used marriage as an excuse to allow Braun to appear at official duties, as she could then be introduced as Fegelein's sister-in-law. When Fegelein was caught in the last days of the war

trying to escape to Sweden or Switzerland, Hitler ordered his execution. He was shot for desertion in the garden of the Reich Chancellery on April 28, 1945.

In simple terms, the U.S. armed forces are made up of the five branches of the armed forces: the Air Force, the Army, the Coast Guard, the Marine Corps, and the Navy. www.military.com

Life

Conversion of the small holiday home Hitler bought in 1933 on the mountain in

Obersalzberg began in 1934 and was completed in 1936. A large wing was added to the original house and several additional buildings were built. The entire area was fenced off, and the remaining houses on the mountain were bought by the Nazi party and demolished. Braun and the other members of the entourage were cut off from the outside world while in residence. Speer, Hermann Goring, and Martin Bormann built houses inside the compound.

Hitler's valet, Heinz Linge, said in his memoirs that Hitler and Braun had two bedrooms and two bathrooms with interconnecting doors at the Berghof, and Hitler would end most evenings alone with her in her study before they retired to bed. She wore a 'house dress or housecoat' and drank wine; Hitler would have tea. Public displays of affection or physical contact were non-

existent, even in the closed world of the Berghof. Braun took on the role of host among regular visitors, although she was not involved in household management. She regularly invited friends and family members to accompany her during her stays, the only guest to do so.

Braun with Hitler, walk their dogs... When Henriette von Schirach suggested that Braun go into hiding after the war, Braun replied: 'Do you think I would let him die alone? I will stay with him until the last moment... Hitler appointed Braun in his will, to receive 12,000 Reichsmarks each year after his death. He loved her very much and worried when she was playing sports or coming back late for tea.

Braun loved his two Scottish terriers named Negus and Stasi and they appear in his home movies. She usually kept them away from Hitler's German shepherd, Blondi. Blondi was killed by one of the entourages on April 29, 1945, when Hitler ordered that one of the cyanide capsules obtained for Braun and Hitler's suicide the next day be tested on the dog. Braun's dogs and blonde puppies were slaughtered by Hitler's dog handler, Fritz Tornow, on April 30.

Marriage and suicide

Death of Adolf Hitler

In early April 1945, Braun traveled from Munich to Berlin to be with Hitler at the Fuhrer bunker. She refused to leave as the Red Army closed in on the capital. After midnight on the night of April 28, 29, Hitler and Braun were married in a small civil ceremony in the Fuhrer bunker. Joseph Goebbels and Martin Bormann attended the event. Later, Hitler arranged a modest wedding breakfast with his new wife. With Braun's marriage, her legal name changed to Eva Hitler. When she signed her marriage certificate, she wrote the letter B for her last name, then lined this up and replaced it with Hitler.

After 1 p.m. on the afternoon of April 30, 1945, Braun and Hitler bid farewell to staff and members of the inner circle. Later that afternoon, at approximately 3:30 p.m., several witnesses reported hearing a loud gunshot, after waiting a few minutes, Hitler's valet, Heinz Linge, and Hitler's SS warrant officer, Otto Gansche, entered the small study and found Hitler's lifeless bodies on a small sofa. Braun had bitten himself in a cyanide capsule and Hitler had shot himself in the right temple with his pistol. The bodies were carried up the stairs and through the emergency exit of the bunker to the garden behind the Reich Chancellery, where they were burned. Braun was 33 when she died.

The charred remains were found by the Russians and secretly buried in the SMERSH compound in Magdeburg, Germany, along with the bodies of Joseph and Magda Goebbels and their six children. On April 4, 1970, a Soviet

KGB team with detailed funeral cards secretly exhumed five boxes of wooden remains. The remains were completely burned and crushed, after which the ashes were dumped into the Biederitz River, a tributary of the nearby Elbe.

The rest of Braun's family survived the war. His mother, Franziska, died at the age of 96 in January 1976, after living her days on a former farm Ruhpolding, Bavaria. His father, Fritz, died in 1964.

Gretl gave birth to a daughter—whom she named Eva—on May 5, 1945. Later, she married Kurt Beringhoff, a businessperson. She died in 1987.

Braun's older sister, Ilse, was not part of Hitler's inner circle. She married twice and died in 1979.

As the Third Reich collapsed towards the end of the war, Braun swore allegiance to Hitler and went to Berlin with him. He stayed in the heavily strengthened Führer bunker under the Reich Chancellery. While Red Army troops were fighting in the neighborhood on April 29, 1945, she married Hitler in a brief civil ceremony; She was 33 and 56. Less than 40 hours (about 1 and a half days) later, they committed suicide together in a bunker lounge, biting her into a cyanide capsule. The German public was not aware of Braun's relationship with Hitler until after their death.

Adolf Hitler's sexuality has long been the subject of historical and scholarly debate. There is evidence that he has had romantic encounters with several women during his life, as well as evidence of his antipathy to homosexuality, and no evidence of homosexual encounters. His name has been linked to several lovers, two of whom committed suicide. Another died of complications eight years after a suicide attempt, and one of them made a failed suicide attempt.

Hitler created a public image as a single man with no domestic life, entirely devoted to his political mission and the nation. Her relationship with Eva Braun, which lasted 14 years, was hidden from the public and everything but those around her. Braun biographer Heike Gortemaker notes that the couple had a normal sex life. Hitler and Braun married in late April 1945, less than 40 hours (about 1 and a half days) before committing suicide together. Clams say he was sexually abused by his father during his childhood days.

Two Allied wartime reports attempted to analyze Hitler psychologically. Walter C. Langer's 1943 report for the American Office of Strategic Services (OSS) described Hitler as having suppressed homosexual tendencies and considered him a helpless coprophil. In 1943, psychologist Henry Murray authored a separate psychoanalytic report for the OSS that drew similar conclusions. Otto Strasser, one of Hitler's opponents in the Nazi party,

also told his post-war interrogators a similar story. The British historian Sir Ian Kershaw describes Strasser's statement as 'anti-Hitler propaganda.'

In the research that followed Hitler's death, a variety of claims were made about Hitler's sexual orientation: whether he was gay, bisexual, or asexual. There is a lack of conclusive evidence, but most historians believe he was heterosexual. There is at least one claim that Hitler had an illegitimate child (named Jean-Marie Loret) with one of his lovers. Traditional historians, such as Ian Kershaw, dismiss this as unlikely or impossible.

Hitler's sex life has long been the subject of speculation and rumors, many of which have been invented or 'spiced' by his political enemies.

While the sexual preferences of many members of Hitler's inner circle are known, there is a lack of conclusive evidence of Hitler's sexuality.

Much of the evidence about Hitler's private life comes from people around him, such as his warrant officers, secretaries, Albert Speer, the Richard Wagner family, and others. There is evidence that he has had an infatuation with many women during his life, as well as evidence of his antipathy to homosexuality, and no evidence that he engaged in homosexual behavior. The British historian Sir Ian Kershaw describes him as being repulsed by personal contact and sexual activity, including homosexuality and prostitution, especially

when he was a young man in Vienna. He was afraid of contracting a sexually transmitted infection.

Hermann Reuschling claimed to have seen in Hitler's World War I military record an object concerning a court-martial that found Hitler guilty of pederastic practices with an officer. Reuschling also claimed that in Munich Hitler was found guilty of a violation of paragraph 175, which dealt with pederasty. No evidence of either of these charges was found.

Hitler had some brief relationships when he was young. He was deeply attached to his half-niece Geli Raubal, 19 years his junior. She began living at her residence after her mother became Hitler's housekeeper in 1925. Although the exact nature and extent of their relationship is unknown, Kershaw describes it as a latent 'sexual addiction.'

It was rumored among contemporaries that they were in a romantic relationship. Geli committed suicide with Hitler's gun in his Munich apartment in September 1931. His death was a source of deep and lasting pain for Hitler.

Ernst Hanfstaengl, one of the members of Hitler's inner circle in the early years in Munich, wrote that 'Hitler was a case of a man who was neither fish, flesh nor poultry, nor homosexual nor heterosexual ... he had formed the firm conviction that he was helpless, repressed type, masturbating. Nevertheless,

Hanfstaengl was quite convinced of Hitler's heterosexuality, which he tried unsuccessfully to encourage a romantic relationship between Hitler and Martha Dodd, daughter of the American ambassador. According to Hanfstaengl, filmmaker Leni Riefenstahl tried to start a relationship with Hitler from the beginning, but he refused.

The Hitler regime persecuted homosexuals, sending between 5,000 and 15,000 people to concentration camps; between 2,500 and 7,500 died. After the Night of the Long Knives (1934), Hitler described the homosexuality of Ernst Rahm and other leaders of his as corrupt and immoral. In August 1941 Hitler declared that 'homosexuality is in fact as infectious and as dangerous as the plague,' as well as supported reichsf-hrer-SS Heinrich Himmler efforts to remove gay men from the army and the SS. Male homosexuality was illegal, in addition to offenders sent to prison or directly to concentration camps.

Hitler created a public image as a single man with no domestic life, entirely devoted to his political mission and the nation. He considered himself attractive to women, in part because of his position of power. Albert Speer, Hitler's friend, recalls that he had expressed a preference for unintelligent women who did not challenge him to his work or prevent him from relaxing in his spare time. Kershaw speculated that Hitler preferred young women who were easy to dominate and mold. He notes that at least three of Hitler's

associates (Eva Braun, Geli Raubal, and Maria Reiter) were much younger than him: Braun was 23 years younger, Raubal was 19 years younger, and Reiter was 21 years his junior.

His relationship with Braun, which lasted 14 years, was hidden from the public and everything but those around him. In this circle (most of whom survived the war), he was open to Braun, and they lived together in Berchtesgaden as a couple. Hitler's valet, Heinz Linge, said in his memoirs that Hitler and Braun had two bedrooms and two bathrooms with interconnecting doors at the Berghof, and Hitler would end most evenings alone with her in her study before they retired to bed.

She wore a 'house dress or housecoat' and drank wine; Hitler would have tea. Braun biographer Heike Gortemaker notes that the couple had a normal sex life. Braun's friends and relatives described her with a laugh at a 1938 photograph of Neville Chamberlain sitting on a couch in Hitler's Munich apartment with the following remark: 'If only he knew what that couch saw.'

Hitler's letters provide proof that he loved her, and worried when she participated in sports or was late back for tea. His secretary Traudl

Junge said that during the war, Hitler called Braun every day. He was concerned for her safety when she was staying in the Munich house, he had

bought from her. Junge once asked Hitler why he had never married. Hitler replied. ». I could not have given my wife enough time. Hitler told him that he did not want children, as they would have had. ». an exceedingly tough time because they are supposed to possess the same gifts as their famous parents and they cannot be forgiven for being mediocre, 'In the end, Hitler and Braun were married in the Führerbunker in Berlin at the end of April 1945, less than 40 hours (about 1 and a half days) before committing suicide together. (

Wartime OSS Reports En 1943, the American Office of Strategic Services (OSS) received Walter C. Langer's A Psychological Analysis of Adolf Hitler: His Life and Legend, commissioned to help the Allies understand the dictator. The report later expanded in book form as The Spirit of Adolf Hitler: The Secret War Time Report (1972) described Hitler as having repressed homosexual tendencies and declared that he was a helpless coprophil.

Psychologist Henry Murray authored a separate psychoanalytic report for OSS also in 1943, entitled Adolph Personality Analysis Hitler: With predictions of his future behavior and suggestions to deal with him now and after the surrender of Germany. He also dealt with Hitler's alleged coprophilia, but on the whole diagnosed Hitler with a schizophrenic. One of Hitler's opponents in the Nazi party, Otto Strasser, told OSS interrogators that the Nazi dictator had forced Geli Raubal to urinate and defecate on him. Kershaw argues

that Strasser's stories about 'deviant sexual practices' should be considered ... anti-Hitler propaganda.

Recent claims

In the research that followed his death, various allegations were made about Hitler's sex: whether he was gay, bisexual, or asexual, or that he may have had sex with his half-niece, Geli Raubal.

The 1995 book *The Pink Swastika*, by Scott Lively and Kevin Abrams, states that most of the best Nazis were homosexuals and that there is evidence that homosexuals are violent and dangerous. Traditional historians have criticized the book for its inaccuracies and the manipulation of facts. Bob Moser, writing for the Southern Poverty Law Center, says the book was promoted by anti-gay groups and that historians agree that its premise is

'Completely false.'

Jack Nusan Porter of the University of Massachusetts Lowell wrote in 1998: 'Did Hitler despise homosexuals? Was he ashamed of his own homosexual identity? These are areas of psychohistory that are beyond known knowledge. My feelings are that Hitler was asexual in the traditional sense and had bizarre sexual fetishes. Historian Lothar Machtan argues in *The Hidden Hitler* (2001) that Hitler was homosexual. The book speculates on Hitler's

experiences in Vienna with young friends, his adult relationships with (among others) Rhm, Hanfstaengl, and Emil Mauritius, and includes a study by the Mend Protocol, a series of allegations made to the Munich police in the early 1920s by Hans Mend, who served with Hitler during World War I.

American journalist Ron Rosenbaum is overly critical of Machtan's work, saying his 'evidence is inconclusive and often far from evidence.' Most scholars reject Machtan's claims and believe Hitler was heterosexual. In 2004, HBO produced a documentary film based on Machtan's theory, *hidden Fuhrer: Debating the Enigma of Hitler's Sexuality*.

Jap is an English abbreviation for the word 'Japanese.' Today, it is considered an ethnic slur among Japanese minority populations in other countries, although English-speaking countries differ in that they consider the term offensive. In the United States, Japanese Americans have come to find the term controversial or offensive, even when used as an abbreviation. In the past, Jap was not considered to be primarily offensive; however, during and after the events of World War II, the term became derogatory.

National Socialism (German: Nationalsozialismus,) more commonly known as Nazism is the ideology and practice associated with the 20th century German Nazi Party and the Nazi state as well as other far-right groups. Usually characterized as a form of fascism that integrates scientific racism and anti-

Semitism, Nazism developed from the influences of pan-Germanism, the German nationalist movement, and anti-communism.

Freikorps paramilitary groups emerged during the Weimar Republic after the German defeat in World War I.

Nazism subscribes to the theories of racial hierarchy and social Darwinism.

Nordic race) have been portrayed as the purest of the Aryan race, and were, therefore, the race of the masters. Opposed to both capitalism and communism, it aimed to overcome social divisions, all parts of a homogeneous society seeking national unity and traditionalism. Nazism also vigorously pursued what it considered historically German territory under the free-market of Pan-Germanism (or Heim ins Reich), as well as additional land for German expansion under the Lebensraum doctrine.

The term 'national socialism' was born out of attempts to create a nationalist redefinition of socialism as an alternative to internationalist Marxist socialism and free-market capitalism. The Nazis sought to achieve this through a 'people's community (Volksgemeinschaft) to unite all Germans as national comrades while excluding those regarded as outsiders of the community or 'foreign peoples' (Fremdv-lkische.) He rejected the Marxist concept of class

struggle, opposed ideas of class equality and international solidarity, and sought to defend private property and business.

The Nazi Party was founded as a pan-German Nationalist and Anti-Semitic Workers' Party on January 5, 1919. In the early 1920s, Adolf Hitler took control of the organization and renamed it the Nazi Party (Nationalsozialistische Deutsche

Arbeiterpartei, NSDAP) to broaden its appeal. The National Socialist program, adopted in 1920, called for a united Great Germany that would deny citizenship to Jews or those of Jewish origin while supporting land reform and the nationalization of certain industries. In *Mein Kampf*, written in 1924, Hitler described anti-Semitism and anti-communism at the heart of his political philosophy, as well as his contempt for parliamentary democracy and his belief in Germany's right to territorial expansion.

In 1933, with the support of the elites, Hitler became Chancellor of Germany, and the Nazis gradually established a one-party state, under which Jews, political opponents, and others 'Undesirable elements were marginalized, and several million were eventually imprisoned and killed. Hitler purged the most socially and economically radical factions of the party in the middle of 1934 night of long knives and, after the death of President Hindenburg, political power was concentrated in his hands, such as Fuhrer or 'leader.' After the

Holocaust and the German defeat during World War II, only a few fringes racist groups, commonly referred to as neo-Nazis, still describe themselves as following National Socialism.

The full name of Adolf Hitler's party was

National Socialist German Workers' Party

(German National Socialist Workers' Party; NSDAP.) The Nazi stenographer was formed from the first two syllables of the German pronunciation of the word national.

The term was used before the rise of the NSDAP as a familiar and derogatory word for a backward peasant, characterizing a clumsy and clumsy person. It comes from Ignaz, being a shortened version of Ignatius, a common name in Bavaria, the region from which the Nazis emerged. Opponents seized it and shortened the first word of the party's name, Nationalsozialistische, to the disdainful 'Nazi.'

The NSDAP briefly adopted the Nazi designation, attempting to reclaim the term, but quickly revived this effort and avoided it when it was in power. The use of 'Nazi Germany,' the 'Nazi regime,' and so on, was popularized by German exiles abroad. From them, the term spread in other languages and was eventually brought back to Germany after World War II.

Position in the political spectrum

Foreground, from left to right: Fuhrer Adolf Hitler; Hermann Goring; Minister of Propaganda Joseph Goebbels; Rudolf Hess Nazis alongside members of the reactionary and far-right monarchist German National People's Party (DNVP) during the brief Nazi-DNVP alliance with the Harzburg Front from 1931 to 1932 The majority of researchers identify Nazism in practice as a form of far-right politics. Far-right themes in Nazism include the argument that higher people have the right to dominate others and purge society of inferior elements.

Adolf Hitler and other supporters have officially portrayed Nazism as neither left nor right, but syncretic. Hitler to Mein Kampf directly attacked the politics of the left and right in Germany, saying: Today, our politicians on the left constantly insist that their greedy and obsequious foreign policy necessarily results from the disarmament of Germany, when the truth is that it is the politics of traitors, right-wing politicians deserve the same reproach. It is thanks to their wretched cowardice that these Jewish thugs who came to power in 1918 were able to steal his weapons from the nation.

Hitler, when asked if he supported the 'bourgeois right,' claimed that Nazism was not exclusively for any class and indicated that he did not Favour the left or the right but preserved the 'pure' elements of both 'camps,' declaring:

'From the camp of the bourgeois tradition, it requires national determination and materialism of Marxist dogma., living, creative socialism.

The Nazis were strongly influenced by the post-World War I far-right in Germany, which had common beliefs such as anti-Marxism, anti-liberalism, and anti-Semitism, with nationalism, contempt for the Treaty of Versailles, and condemnation of the Weimar

Republic for the signing of the armistice in November

1918 which later led to their signing of the Treaty of Versailles. A major source of inspiration for the Nazis was the far-right nationalist Freikorps, paramilitary organizations, which engaged in political violence after World War I. Initially, the post-World War I German far-right was dominated by monarchists, but the younger generation, who were associated with The Volkisch nationalism, were more radical and did not express any emphasis on the restoration of the German monarchy. This young generation wanted to dismantle the Weimar Republic and create a new radical and strong state based on a martial ethic that could revive the 'Spirit of 1914' associated with German national unity (Volksgemeinschaft.)

On 11 October 1931, in Bad Harzburg, the Nazis, the far-right monarchist, the reactionary German National People's Party (DNVP), and

others, such as monarchist officers of the German army and several prominent industrialists, allied in opposition to the Weimar Republic; officially known as the National Front, but commonly known as the Harzburg Front. The Nazis stated that the alliance was purely tactical and that there were still substantial differences with the DNVP. The Nazis described the DNVP as a bourgeois party and called themselves an anti-bourgeois party.

After the 1932 elections, the alliance broke up after the DNVP lost many of its seats in the Reichstag. The Nazis denounced them as 'an insignificant bunch of reactionaries.' The DNVP responded by denouncing the Nazis for their socialism, street violence, and 'economic experiences' that would take place if the Nazis rose to power.

Emperor William II, who was forced to abdicate the throne and go into exile amid an attempt at a communist revolution in Germany, initially supported the Nazi Party. His four sons, including Prince Eitel Friedrich and Prince Oskar, became members of the Nazi party, in the hope that in exchange for their support, the Nazis would allow the restoration of the monarchy.

There were factions in the Nazi party, both conservative and radical. The conservative Nazi Hermann Goring urged Hitler to reconcile with capitalists and reactionaries. Heinrich Himmler and Reinhard Heydrich are other prominent conservative Nazis.

The radical Nazi Joseph Goebbels hated capitalism, seeing it as having Jews at the base, and he stressed the need for the party to focus on both a proletarian and national character. These views were shared by Otto Strasser, who later left the Nazi Party in the belief that Hitler had betrayed the party's socialist goals by endorsing capitalism. Large segments of the Nazi Party strongly supported its official socialist, revolutionary and anti-capitalist positions and expected a social and economic revolution when the party came to power in 1933. Many of the millions of members of the Sturmabteilung (SA) have committed themselves to the party's official socialist program. The leader of the SA, Ernst Rahm, lobbied for a 'second revolution' (the 'first revolution' being the seizure of power by the Nazis) that would strengthen the party's official socialist program. Also, he wanted the SA to absorb the much smaller German army from its ranks under his leadership.

Before becoming anti-Semitic and Nazi, Hitler had lived a bohemian lifestyle as a watercolorist wandering in Austria and southern Germany, although he maintained elements of it later in life. Hitler served in World War I. After the war, his battalion was absorbed by the Bavarian Soviet Republic from 1918 to 1919, where he was elected deputy representative of the battalion. According to historian Thomas Weber, Hitler attended the funeral of communist Kurt Eisner (German Jew) wearing a black mourning arm and a red communist

armband on the other, which he took as proof that Hitler's political convictions had not yet solidified. In *Mein Kampf*, Hitler never mentioned any service with the Bavarian Soviet Republic purgeth and declared that he became an anti-Semite in 1913 in Vienna. This statement was disputed with the assertion that he was not anti-Semitic at the time.

Hitler changed his political views in response to the Treaty of Versailles of June 1919, and it was then that he became anti-Semitic, a German nationalist. As a Nazi, Hitler had expressed his opposition to capitalism, having regarded capitalism as having Jewish origins. He accused capitalism of holding ransoms for nations in the interest of a parasitic cosmopolitan renter class.

Hitler took a pragmatic position between the conservative and radical factions of the Nazi Party, in that it accepted private ownership and allowed private capitalist enterprises to exist if they respected the objectives of the Nazi state.

However, if a private capitalist company resisted Nazi objectives, it sought to destroy it. After the Nazis came to power, the AS of Rghm launched attacks on individuals considered to be associated with conservative reactions, without Hitler's permission.

Hitler considered that the independent actions of Rghm violated and threatened his leadership, as well as the endangerment of the regime by alienating conservative President Paul von Hindenburg and the conservative-oriented German army. This resulted in Hitler purgeth and other radical members of the SA in what came to be known as the Night of the Long Knives.

Although he opposed communist ideology, Hitler repeatedly praised the Soviet Union leader Joseph Stalin and Stalinism. Hitler praised Stalin for seeking to cleanse the Communist Party of the Soviet Union of Jewish influences, noting Stalin's purge of Jewish communists such as Leon Trotsky, Grigory Zinoviev, Lev Kamenev, and Karl Radek. While Hitler always intended to put Germany in conflict with the Soviet Union to gain Lebensraum (living space), he supported a temporary strategic alliance between Nazi Germany and the Soviet Union to form an anti-liberal common front to crush liberal democracies, especially France.

Origins

See also: Early Timeline of Nazism

Nationalism Volkisch

Johann Gottlieb Fichte is considered one of the fathers of German nationalism... One of the most significant ideological influences on the Nazis

was the German nationalist Johann Gottlieb Fichte, whose works had inspired Hitler and other Nazi members, including Dietrich Eckart and Arnold Fanck. In speeches to the German nation (1808), written amid the occupation of Berlin by Napoleonic France, Fichte called for a German national revolution against the occupiers of the French, made passionate public speeches, armed his students to fight the French, and insisted on the need for action by the German nation to free itself.

Fichte's nationalism was populist and opposed to traditional elites, spoke of the need for a people's war' (Volkskrieg), and put forward concepts like those adopted by the Nazis. Fichte promoted German exceptionalism and stressed the need German nation to purify (including the purge of the German language of French words, a policy that the Nazis undertook when coming to power.)

Another important figure of the pre-Nazi vulkisch thought was William Heinrich Riehl, whose work —Land and People, written between 1857 and 1863) collectively linked the

German Volk to his native landscape and nature, a pairing that strongly opposed mechanical and materialistic civilization developing because of industrialization. Geographers

Friedrich Ratzel and Karl Haushofer borrowed from Riehl's work, as did Nazi ideologues Alfred Rosenberg and Paul Schultze-Naumburg; who both used part of Riehl's philosophy by arguing that ... each nation-state was an organism that needed special living space to survive. Riehl's influence is noticeable in the Blut und Boden (Blood and Soil) philosophy introduced by Oswald Spengler, which the Nazi agronomist Walther Darré and other prominent Nazis adopted.

The volkisch nationalism denounced soulless materialism, individualism, and secularized urban industrial society while advocating a 'superior' society based on ethnic German 'folk' culture and German 'Blood.'

He denounced foreigners and foreign ideas and declared that Jews, Freemasons, and others were 'traitors to the nation' and unworthy of inclusion. The volkisch nationalism saw the world in terms of natural law and romanticism; it regarded societies as organic, extolling the virtues of rural life, condemning the neglect of tradition and the degradation of morality, denouncing the destruction of the natural environment, and condemning 'cosmopolitan' cultures such as Jews and Roma.

In the days of imperial Germany, the volkisch nationalism was overshadowed by both Prussian patriotism and the federalist tradition of various states there.

The events of the First World War, including the end of the Prussian monarchy in Germany, led to a surge in revolutionary nationalism.

The Nazis supported these revolutionary nationalist policies in Volkisch and claimed that their ideology was influenced by the leadership and policies of German Chancellor Otto von Bismarck, founder of the German Empire.

The Nazis said they were determined to continue the process of creating a unified German nation-state that Bismarck had begun and wanted to achieve. While Hitler supported Bismarck's creation of the German Empire, he criticized Bismarck's moderate domestic policies. On the question of Bismarck's support for a Kleindeutschland ('Little Germany,' excluding Austria) vs. Pan-German,

('Great Germany') of the Nazis, Hitler declared that Bismarck's accomplishment of Klein Deutschland was the 'highest achievement' that Bismarck could have achieved 'within the possible limits of that time.' In *Mein Kampf* (My Struggle), Hitler presented himself as a 'second Bismarck.'

Georg Ritter von Schöner, one of the main Pan-Germanism During his youth in Austria, Hitler was politically influenced by the Austrian pan-

Germanist Georg Ritter von Schöner, who advocated radical German nationalism, anti-Semitism,

Catholicism, anti-Slavism, and anti-Habsburg. Hitler and his followers adopted for the Nazi movement the salvation of Heil, the title of the Führer, and the model of absolute leadership of the party.

Hitler was also impressed by the populist anti-Semitism and the anti-liberal bourgeois agitation of Karl Lueger, who as mayor of Vienna during Hitler's time in the city used a scum-vibrating oratory style that appealed to the wider masses.

However, unlike von Schöner, Lueger was not a German nationalist, but a pro-Catholic Habsburg supporter.

Racial theories and anti-Semitism...

The concept of the Aryan race, promoted by the Nazis, stems from racial theories that Europeans are descendants of Indo-Iranian settlers, peoples of ancient India, and ancient Persia. Proponents of this theory based their assertion on the similarity of European words and their meaning with those of Indo-Iranian languages. Johann Gottfried Herder argued that the Germanic peoples had close racial ties with the Ancient Indians and the Ancient Persians,

who, in his view, were advanced peoples with a great capacity for wisdom, nobility, restraint, and science.

Herder's contemporaries used the concept of the Aryan race to distinguish between what they considered a 'high and noble' Aryan culture and that of 'parasitic' Semitic culture.

The notions of white supremacy and Aryan racial superiority were combined in the 19th century, with white supremacists arguing that certain groups of whites were members of an Aryan 'master race' superior to other races, and particularly superior to the Semitic race, which they associate with 'cultural infertility.' Arthur de Gobineau, a French racial theorist, and aristocrat, attributed the fall of the former regime in France to the racial degeneration caused by racial mixing, which he said destroyed the purity of the Aryan race, a term he reserved only for Germanics. Gobineau's theories, which have attracted strong interest in Germany, have highlighted the existence of an irreconcilable polarity between Aryan (Germanic) and Jewish cultures.

Houston Stewart Chamberlain do not let livre the foundations would prove to be a work the Aryan mysticism of German nationalism affirmed that Christianity originated in the Aryan religious tradition and that the Jews had usurped the legend from the Aryans. Houston Stewart Chamberlain, an English supporter of racial theory, supported notions of German supremacy and anti-

Semitism in Germany. Chamberlain's work, *The Foundations of the 19th Century* (1899), praised the Germanic peoples for their creativity and idealism while asserting that the Germanic spirit was threatened by a 'Jewish' spirit of selfishness and materialism. Chamberlain used his thesis to promote monarchical conservatism while denouncing democracy, liberalism, and socialism.

The book became popular, especially in Germany. Chamberlain stressed the need for a nation to maintain racial purity to prevent degeneration and argued that racial mixing with Jews should never be allowed. In 1923 Chamberlain met Hitler, whom he admired as a leader of the rebirth of the free spirit. Madison Grant's *The Passing of the Great Race* (1916) advocated Nordicism and proposed using a eugenic program to preserve the Nordic race. After reading the book, Hitler called it 'my Bible.'

In Germany, the idea that Jews economically exploited the Germans became important on the founding of Germany because of the rise of many wealthy Jews in important positions during the unification of Germany in 1871. Empirical evidence shows that from 1871 to the beginning of the 20th century, German Jews were overrepresented in the German upper and middle classes while under-represented in the lower German class, particularly in the fields of agricultural and industrial work. German Jewish financiers and bankers played a

key role in promoting Germany's economic growth from 1871 to 1913, and these Jewish financiers and bankers benefited enormously from this boom. In 1908, among the twenty-nine richest German families with total fortunes of up to 55 million marks at the time, five were Jewish, and the Rothschilds were the second richest German family. The predominance of Jews in Germany's banking, commercial and industrial sectors during this period was extremely high, with an estimated 1% of the German population. This over-representation of Jews in these regions aroused resentment of non-Jewish Germans in times of economic crisis. The stock market crash of 1873 and the ensuing depression led to a series of attacks on the so-called Jewish economic domination in Germany and increased anti-Semitism.

At that time, in the 1870s, German nationalism began to adopt anti-Semitic and racist themes and was adopted by several radical right-wing political movements.

The Protocols of the Ancients of Zion (1912) was a false anti-Semite created by the secret services of the Russian Empire. Many anti-Semites believed it was real and the Protocol became extremely popular after the First World War. The Protocols claimed that there was a secret international Jewish conspiracy to attack the world.

Hitler had been introduced to the Protocols by Alfred Rosenberg, and from 1920, Hitler concentrated his attacks on the claim that Judaism and Marxism were linked, that Jews and Bolsheviks were the same and that Marxism was a Jewish ideology.

Hitler believed that the Protocols were authentic.

IDEAL ARYAN INFANT: The photo of Hessa Levinsons Taft was selected by the Nazi Party for the cover of their publication *Sonne ins Haus*, but Joseph Goebbels' propaganda machine was never discovered that she was Jewish in 1935.

Radical anti-Semitism has been promoted by prominent defenders of Völkisch nationalism, including Eugen Diederichs, Paul de Lagarde and Julius Langbehn. De Lagarde called the Jews a 'bacillus, the bearer of decomposition ... polluting all national cultures ... and destroy all faith with their materialistic liberalism,' and he called for the extermination of the Jews. Langbehn called for a war of annihilation of the Jews; its genocidal policies were published by the Nazis and given to soldiers on the front-line during World War II. An anti-Semitic ideologue at the time, Friedrich Lange, even used the term 'National Socialism' to describe his anti-capitalist take on the nationalist model of Völkisch.

Johann Gottlieb Fichte accused the Jews of Germany of having been, and inevitably to continue to be, a 'state within a state' that threatened German national unity. Fichte promoted two options to solve this problem: the first was the creation of a Jewish state in Palestine to insinuate the Jews to leave Europe. The other option was violence against Jews, saying that the goal would be ... to cut off all their heads in one night, and put new ones on their shoulders, which should not contain a single Jewish idea.

Before The Nazi accession to power, Hitler often blamed moral degradation on Rassen Schander (racial smear), a means of ensuring the supporters of his persistent anti-Semitism, which had been reduced to popular consumption. Before the enthrone of the racial laws of Nuremberg in 1935 by the Nazis, many German nationalists

Roland Freisler strongly supported the laws to ban Rassen Schander between Aryans and Jews as racial treason.

Even before the laws were officially passed, the Nazis banned sexual relations and marriages between party members and Jews. Party members convicted of Rassen Schander were heavily punished; some members were even sentenced to death.

The Nazis claimed that Bismarck was unable to complete German national unification because of Jewish infiltration into the German parliament and that their abolition of Parliament ended the obstacle to unification. Using the myth of the stab in the back, the Nazis accused the Jews - and other settlements he considered non-German - of possessing extranational loyalties, thus exacerbating German anti-Semitism about Juden Frage (the Jew Question,) the popular far-right political duck when the ethnic movement *vulksch* and their politics of romantic nationalism to establish a *Middle-utschland* were strong.

The positions of Nazism in racial politics may have developed from the views of important 19th-century biologists, including the Jean-Baptiste Lamarck biologist of French, through the idealistic version of Lamarckism by Ernst Haeckel and the father of genetics, the German botanist Gregor Mendel.

However, Haeckel's works were later condemned and banned from bookstores and libraries by the Nazis as inappropriate for 'National Socialist education and training in the Third Reich.' It was because of his atheist and materialistic 'monism' philosophy that the Nazis did not like.

Contrary to Darwinian theory, the Lamarckian theory has officially classified the races in a hierarchy of the evolution of monkeys while the Darwinian theory has not classified the races in a hierarchy of higher or lower evolution of monkeys, simply classifying humans as having progressed in the

evolution of monkeys. Many Lamarckians considered that the 'lower' breeds had been exposed too long to debilitating conditions for a significant 'improvement' of their condition shortly. Haeckel used Lamarckian theory to describe the existence of interracial struggle, and put races on a hierarchy of evolution, ranging from being entirely human to subhuman.

The Mendelian heritage, or modalism, was supported by the Nazis, as well as by the proponents of eugenics at the time. The Mendelian theory of inheritance has stated that genetic traits and attributes have been passed down from one generation to the next. Proponents of eugenics have used the theory of Mendelian inheritance to demonstrate the transfer of biological disease and impairments from parents to children, including mental disability; others have also used Mendelian theory to demonstrate the legacy of social traits, with racialists claiming a racial nature of certain general traits such as inventiveness or criminal behavior.

Answer to the First World War and Fascism

During the First World War, the German sociologist Johann Plenge spoke of the rise of a 'National Socialism' in

Germany in what he called the 'ideas of

1914' which were a declaration of war against the

'Ideas of 1789' (the French Revolution.)

According to Plenge, the 'ideas of 1789' that included human rights, democracy, individualism, and liberalism were rejected in favour of '1914 ideas' which included 'German values' of duty, discipline, law, and order. Plenge believed that ethnic solidarity (Volksgemeinschaft) would replace class division and that 'racial comrades' would unite to create a socialist society in the struggle of 'proletarian' Germany against 'capitalist' Britain.

He believed that the 'Spirit of 1914' was manifested in the concept of the 'People's League of

National socialism.

This National Socialism was a form of state socialism that rejected 'the idea of unlimited freedom' and promoted an economy that would serve all of Germany under the direction of the state.

This National Socialism was opposed to capitalism because of the components that were against the 'national interest' of Germany but insisted that National Socialism would strive for greater efficiency in the economy. Plenge advocated an authoritarian and rational ruling elite to develop National

Socialism through a hierarchical technocratic state. Plenge's ideas formed the basis of Nazism.

Oswald Spengler, philosopher of history Oswald Spengler, a German cultural philosopher, was a major influence on Nazism, although, after 1933, Spengler alienated from Nazism and was later condemned by the Nazis for criticizing Adolf Hitler.

Spengler's conception of National Socialism and several his political views were shared by the Nazis and the conservative revolutionary movement. Spengler's views were also popular among Italian fascists, including Benito Mussolini.

Spengler's book *The Decline of the West* (1918), written during the last months of the First World War, addresses the claim of the decadence of modern European civilization, which he believes is caused by atomizing and irreligious individualization and cosmopolitanism.

Spengler's major thesis was that there was a law of historical-cultural development involving a cycle of birth, maturity, aging, and death when it reaches its final form of civilization.

By reaching the point of civilization, a culture will lose its creative capacity and succumb to decadence until the emergence of the 'barbarians' creates a new era.

Spengler regarded the Western world as having succumbed to the decadence of intellect, money, cosmopolitan urban life, irreligious life, atomized individualization, and was at the end of its biological and 'spiritual' fertility.

He believed that the 'young' German nation as an imperial power would inherit the legacy of ancient Rome, would lead to a restoration of value in 'blood' and instinct, while the ideals of rationalism would be revealed as absurd.

Spengler's notions of 'Prussian socialism' described in his book *Preussentum und Socialismus* ('Prussianism and Socialism,' 1919) influenced Nazism and the conservative revolutionary movement. Spengler wrote: 'The meaning of socialism is that life is not controlled by the opposition between rich and poor, but by the rank that achievement and talent confer. It is our freedom, our freedom from the economic despotism of the individual.'

Spengler adopted the anti-English ideas addressed by Plenge and Sombart during the First World War that condemned English liberalism and English parliamentarians while advocating a national socialism that was free from Marxism and would link the individual to the state through the corporatist

organization. Spengler asserted that Prussian social characteristics existed throughout Germany, including creativity, discipline, concern for the greater good, productivity, and self-denial.

He prescribed war as a necessity, saying 'War is the eternal form of higher human existence and states exist for war: they are the expression of the will to war.'

The Erhardt Marine Brigade during the Kapp Putsch in Berlin, 1920. The Erhardt Marine Brigade used the swastika as a symbol, as seen on their helmets and the truck; he inspired the Nazi party to adopt it as a symbol of the movement.

Spengler's definition of socialism does not advocate a change in property relations. He denounces Marxism for seeking to train the proletariat to 'expropriate the expropriators,' the capitalist, and then to let them live a life of leisure on this expropriation. He asserted that 'Marxism is the capitalism of the working class' and not true socialism.

True socialism, according to Spengler, would take the form of corporatism, declaring that 'local corporate organizations organized according to the importance of each profession to the people as a whole; higher representation in stages up to a supreme council of the state; Revocable warrants

at any time; no organized parties, no professional politicians, no periodic elections.

The book *Das Dritte Reich* (1923,) translated as 'The Third Reich,' by Arthur Moeller van den Bruck Wilhelm Stapel, an anti-Semitic German intellectual, used Spengler's thesis on cultural confrontation between Jews as Spengler describes as a Magian people against Europeans as a Faustian people. Stapel described the Jews as landless nomadic people in pursuit of an international culture through which they could integrate into Western civilization.

As such, Stapel asserts that Jews were attracted to 'international' versions of socialism, pacifism, or capitalism because, as landless people, Jews transgressed various national cultural boundaries.

Arthur Moeller van den Bruck was initially the dominant figure of the conservative revolutionaries who influenced Nazism. He rejected reactionary conservatism while proposing a new state, which he invented the 'Third Reich,' which would unite all classes under an authoritarian regime. Van den Bruck advocated a combination of right-wing nationalism and left-wing socialism.

Fascism had a major influence on Nazism. The seizure of power by the Italian Fascist leader Benito Mussolini during the march on Rome in 1922

attracted the admiration of Hitler, who less than a month later had begun to shape himself and the Nazi party on Mussolini and the fascists.

Hitler presented the Nazis as a form of German fascism. Benito Mussolini (center in a suit with fists against the body) with other fascist leader figures and black shirts during the March on Rome in November 1923, the Nazis attempted a 'March on Berlin,' modeled on the March on Rome, which failed Beer Hall Putsch in Munich. Other Nazis, especially those of the time associated with the more radical wing of the party such as Gregor Strasser, Joseph Goebbels, and Heinrich Himmler, rejected Italian fascism, accusing it of being too conservative or capitalist. Alfred Rosenberg condemned Italian fascism for being racially confused and having influences from Philosemitism.

Strasser criticized the policy of Führerprinzip as being created by Mussolini and regarded his presence in Nazism as an imported foreign idea.

Throughout relations between Nazi Germany and Fascist Italy, several low-level Nazis scornfully regarded fascism as a conservative movement lacking full revolutionary potential.

Ideology Nationalism and Racialism More information: Nazism and race and racial politics of Nazi Germany- German Nazism emphasized German nationalism, including both irredentism and expansionism. Nazism held racial

theories based on the belief in the existence of an Aryan master race that was superior to all other races.

The Nazis pointed to a racial conflict between the Aryan race and other Jews, whom the Nazis considered a mixed-race, which had infiltrated several societies, and was responsible for the exploitation and repression of the Aryan race. The Nazis also classified the Slavs as Untermensch.

Irredentism and expansionism - Beginning of the Lebensraum, Nazi expulsion of Poles from central Poland, 1939 - The German Nazi party supports German irredentist claims to Austria, Alsace-Lorraine, the region now known as the Czech Republic, and the territory known since 1919 as the Polish corridor. A major policy of the German Nazi party was Lebensraum ('living space') for the German nation based on claims that Germany after World War I was facing a crisis of overcrowding and that expansion was necessary to end the country's overcrowding in the existing confined territory and to provide the necessary resources for the well-being of its population. Since the 1920s, the Nazi party has publicly encouraged Germany's expansion into Soviet-held territories.

In his early years as a Nazi leader, Hitler had said he would be willing to accept friendly relations with Russia on the tactical condition that Russia agrees to return to the German-established borders - The Russian peace

agreement of the Brest-Litovsk Treaty signed by Vladimir Lenin of the Russian Soviet Federal Socialist Republic in

1918 which gave large territories held by Russia to

German control in exchange for peace. Hitler had in 1921 hailed the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk as opening the possibility of re-establishing relations between Germany and Russia, saying:

Thanks to peace with Russia, Germany's livelihood and the provision of work were to have been ensured by the acquisition of land and land, access to raw materials, and friendly relations between the two lands.

Adolf Hitler, 1921

Topographic map of Europe at current borders. The Nazi party declared its support for Drang Nach Osten (expansion from Germany east to the Ural Mountains), which is shown on the upper right side of the map as a brown diagonal line.

Hitler from 1921 to 1922 evoked the rhetoric of the realization of Lebensraum involving the acceptance of a territorially reduced Russia as well as supporting Russian nationals in the overthrow of the Bolshevik government and the establishment of a new Russian government. Hitler's attitudes changed at the end of 1922, in which he then supported an alliance of Germany with Great

Britain to destroy Russia. Later, Hitler declared how far he intended to extend Germany to Russia:

Asia, what a disturbing reservoir of men! Europe's security will not be assured until we bring Asia back behind the Urals. No organized Russian state should be allowed to exist west of this line.

Adolf Hitler Politics for Lebensraum predicted the massive expansion of Germany eastward towards the Ural Mountains. Hitler predicted that the 'surplus' Russian population living west of the Urals would be deported east of the Urals.

Racial theories

In its racial categorization, Nazism regarded what it called the Aryan race as the master race of the world—a race superior to all other races. He considered the Aryans to be in racial conflict with a Métis people, the Jews, whom the Nazis identified as a dangerous enemy of the Aryans. He also considered several other peoples to be dangerous to the welfare of the Aryan race. To preserve the perceived racial purity of the Aryan race, a set of racial laws were introduced in 1935 that came to be known as the Nuremberg Laws.

At first, these laws prevented only sexual relations and marriages between Germans and Jews but were then extended to 'Gypsies, Blacks and their bastard offspring,' who were described by the Nazis as 'foreign-blooded.'

Such relations between Aryans (see Aryan certificate) and non-Aryans were now punishable under racial laws such as Rassen Schander or 'racial defilement.' After the beginning of the war, the racial smear law was extended to all foreigners (non-Germans.) At the bottom of the racial scale of non-Aryans were Jews, Roma, and Blacks. To maintain the 'purity and strength' of the Aryan race, the Nazis eventually sought to exterminate Jews, Roma, and the physically and mentally handicapped. Other groups Homosexuals, blacks, Jehovah's Witnesses, and political opponents were homosexuals, blacks, Jehovah's Witnesses, and political opponents. One of Hitler's ambitions at the beginning of the war was to exterminate, expel or enslave most or all Slavs in Central and Eastern Europe to make room for German settlers.

A high-top wagon with corpses outside the crematorium in the Buchenwald concentration camp, sketching the plan of the Treblinka extermination camp.

Between 1942 and 1943, more than 850,000 Jews were murdered and only 54 survived.

An 'information poster' of the miracle exhibition of life in Berlin in 1935.

In Nazi Germany, the idea of creating a master race led to efforts to 'purify' Deutsche Volk through eugenics; its culmination was mandatory sterilization or involuntary euthanasia of people with physical or mental disabilities. The name given after World War II for the euthanasia program is Action T4.

The ideological justification was Adolf Hitler's vision of Sparta (11th century - 195 BC) as the original state of Volkisch; he praised their impartial destruction of congenitally distorted infants by maintaining racial purity.

Some non-Aryans enlisted in Nazi organizations such as the Hitler Youth and the Wehrmacht, Germans of African descent, and Jewish origin. The Nazis began implementing 'racial hygiene' policies as soon as they came to power. In July 1933, the 'Prevention of Descendants with Hereditary Disease Act' introduced mandatory sterilization for people with a range of diseases considered hereditary, such as schizophrenia, epilepsy, Huntington's chorea, and 'imbecility.'

Sterilization was also mandatory for chronic alcoholism and other forms of social deviance. An estimated 360,000 people (about half the

population of Vermont) were sterilized under the Act between 1933 and 1939.

Although some Nazis suggested that the I program should be extended to people with physical disabilities, such ideas had to be expressed with care, given that some Nazis had physical disabilities, one example being one of the most powerful figures of the regime, Joseph Goebbels, who had a deformed right leg.

Nazi racial theorist Hans F. K. Günther identified the Aryan race in Europe as having five subtype races: Nordic, Mediterranean, Dinaric, Alpine, and Eastern Baltic. Günther applied a Nordic view that the Nordics were the highest in the racial hierarchy among these five races of Aryan subtypes. In his book *Rassenkunde des deutschen Volkes*

(1922) ('Racial Science of the German People') Günther acknowledges that the Germans are composed of the five Aryan subtypes but underlines the strong northern heritage of the Germans. Hitler read *Rassenkunde des deutschen Volkes*, which influenced his racial politics.

The Nazis describe Jews as a racially mixed group of racial types from the Middle East and the East. As such racial groups were concentrated outside Europe, the Nazis claimed that Jews were 'racially alien' to all European peoples and had no deep racial roots in Europe. Moreover, the Nazis' assertion of the Near Eastern and Eastern racial mix, as well as other mixtures such as elements of the Mediterranean race, made the Jews a hybrid race with a strong

non-European heritage, and the Nazis believed that such a population in Europe should be maintained as small as possible.

He empathizes with the racial heritage of Jews in the Middle East. He claimed that the Middle East type was commercially feisty and skilled traders, that the guy possessed strong skills in psychological manipulation that helped them in the trade.

He claimed that the Middle East race had been 'raised not so much for the conquest and exploitation of nature as for the conquest and exploitation of people.'

He described that the European peoples had a racially motivated dislike of the racially motivated peoples of the Middle East and their features, and showed as evidence of these multiple examples of representations of satanic figures with Middle Eastern physiognomy in European art.

He cited the origins of the Jews as the result of two migrations of the Hebrews-a people who were of Eastern racial origin. The first migration was that of the Hebrews arriving in Egypt where he claimed that the Hebrews had mingled with peoples of Negro and Hamitic racial origin.

The second migration brought the Hebrews/Israelites to Canaan where they mixed with the Canaanites who were large of racial origin in the

Middle East but also had Nordic heritage. He identified other mixtures between Israelites and the Near Eastern type as occurring after exiled Babylonia the Israelites.

He claimed that in the 6th century BC. C. The normalization of Judaism began the creation of the Jewish people, and the practice of exogamy between Jews and non-Jews solidified this identity. He stated that the most significant alteration of the racial composition of Jews after the 6th-century BC.C was the result of the massive conversion of the Khazars to Judaism in the 8th century. The Khazars were considered primarily of racial origin in the Middle East.

He identified this massive conversion of the Khazars to Judaism as creating the two main branches of the Jewish people, those

The racial heritage of the Middle East became Ashkenazi Jews (whom he called Eastern Jews) while those of Eastern racial origin became the

Sephardic Jews (whom he called Southern Jews.) During the Second World War, the Nazis pointed out that

The Jews were a 'mix of race' from the Middle East and

Eastern races but did not say that the Middle East and Eastern races on their own were a problem in their view; they said that although Nazism was

anti-Jewish, the term 'anti-Semitic' was not entirely accurate, because Nazism had no antipathy towards non-Jewish Semitic peoples, but towards Jews as a mixed people of the Near East and the Middle East.

Hitler's conception of the Aryan Herrenvolk ('race of Aryan Masters') excluded the vast majority of Central and Eastern European Slavs (Polish, Russian, Ukrainian, etc.) They were considered a race of men reluctant to a higher form of civilization, who were under an instinctive force that brought them back to nature. They also considered the Slavs to have dangerous Jews and Asians, as being Mongolian, influences. The Nazis because of this declared Slavic to be Untermenschen (subhumans.) Nazi anthropologists attempted to prove scientifically the historical history of the Slavs further east. Hans Gonthier, a prominent Nazi racial theorist, considered the Slavs to be Nordic centuries ago, but over time they had mixed with non-northern types. There were exceptions for a small percentage of Slavs who were considered descendants of German settlers and therefore able to be Germanized and be considered part of the Aryan master's race. Hitler described the Slavs as 'a mass of born slaves who feel the need of a master.' The Nazi notion of the inferiority of the Slavs served as a legitimization of their goal of creating Lebensraum for the Germans and other Germans in Eastern Europe, where millions of Germans and other Germanic settlers would be displaced to the conquered territories of

Eastern Europe, while the first Slavic inhabitants were to be annihilated, abducted, or enslaved.

Nazi Germany's policy changed towards the Slavs in response to military Labour shortages, in which it agreed to allow Slavs to serve in its armed forces in the occupied territories, although they were considered subhuman.

Hitler said that the racial conflict against the Jews was necessary to save Germany from suffering under them and rejected concerns about such conflict being inhumane or an injustice:

We may be inhumane, but if we undermine Germany, we have fulfilled the greatest heart in the world. We can do injustice, but if we undermine Germany, we have eliminated the greatest injustice in the world. We may be immoral, but if our people are saved, we have paved the way for morality.

The Nazi propagandist Joseph Goebbels frequently used anti-Semitic rhetoric to emphasize this view: 'The Jew is the enemy and the destroyer of the purity of blood, the conscious destroyer of our race... As socialists, we are opponents of the Jews, because we see, among the Hebrews, the embodiment of capitalism, of the abuse of the nation's property. Social class Nazism rejected the Marxist concept of internationalist class struggle but supported the 'class struggle between nations' and sought to resolve the internal class struggle in the

nation as it identified Germany as a proletarian nation fighting against plutocratic nations.

In 1922, Adolf Hitler discredited other nationalist and racialist political parties as disconnected from the mass population, especially the lower-class and working-class youth:

Racialists were not able to draw practical conclusions from correct theoretical judgments, especially in the Jewish question. In this way, the German racialist movement developed a model like that of the 1880s and 1890s. As at the time, his leadership gradually fell into the hands of very honorable, but fantastically naï, teachers, district councilors, schoolmasters, and lawyers—in short, a bourgeois, idealistic and refined class. It lacked the warm breath of the vigor of the nation's youth.

The Nazi Party had many supporters and members of the working class, and a strong appeal to the middle class. The financial collapse of the white-collar middle class of the 1920s was part of their dedicated support for Nazism. In the impoverished country of the Weimar Republic in the early 1930s, the Nazi Party carried out its socialist policy with food and shelter for the unemployed and the homeless - later recruited from Brownshirt Sturmabteilung

(SA - Storm Detachment.)

Sex and gender

More information: Women in Nazi Germany What is the perfect race?

Blue eyes and blond hair, etc. In his speeches and writings, Hitler spread his beliefs in racial 'purity,' and in the superiority of the 'Germanic race' — what he called an Aryan 'Masters Race.' He said that his race should remain pure for one day to be served in the world. For Hitler, the 'Aryan' ideal was blond, blue-eyed, and tall. Obligations of Polish workers in Germany, warning against the death penalty for any sexual relationship between Germans and Poles... Nazi ideology advocated excluding women from political engagement and confining them to the spheres of

'Kinder, Koche, Kirche' (Children, Cooking, Church.) Many women enthusiastically supported the regime but formed their internal hierarchies.

Hitler's view on the issue of women in Nazi Germany was that while other periods in German history experienced the development and liberation of the female spirit, the National Socialist goal was singular in that they wanted them to produce a child.

On this theme, Hitler once remarked to women: 'With every child, she brings into the world, she fights for the nation. The man defends the Volk, just as the woman stands up for the family. Procreation programs in Nazi Germany

offered favorable loans and grants to encourage newlyweds to offer additional incentives for the birth of their offspring. Contraception has been discouraged for women of racial value in Nazi Germany and abortion has been banned by strict legal mandates, including prison sentences for those who seek them and for the doctors who perform them; whereas abortion for racially 'undesirable' people has been encouraged.

While he was not married until the very end of the regime, Hitler often apologized for his busy life hindering any chance of marriage. Among National Socialist ideologues, marriage was not appreciated by moral considerations, but because it offered an optimal reproductive environment. Heinrich Himmler, a confidant, told a confidant that when he created the Lebensborn program, an organization aimed at significantly increasing the birth rate of 'Aryan' children through extramarital relations between racially pure women and their male equals, he had only the purest men 'design assistants' in mind.

Since the Nazis at the beginning of the war extended the Rassen Schander law (racial smear) to all foreigners, pamphlets have been published to German women to avoid sexual relations with foreign workers brought to Germany and to consider them a danger to their blood. Although the law is

punishable for both sexes, German women are more targeted for having sex with foreign forced laborers in Germany.

The Nazis issued Polish decrees on 8 March

1940, which established regulations

Polish forced laborers (Zivilarbeiter) were brought to Germany during World War II. One of the regulations stated that any Pole 'who has sex with a German or a woman, or who approaches it in any other inappropriate way, will be punished with death.'

After the decrees were adopted, Himmler stated:

Other Germans who had sexual relations with civilian workers of Polish nationality, committed other immoral acts, or engaged in love were arrested immediately.

Later, the Nazis issued similar regulations against Eastern workers (Ost-Arbeiters), including the death penalty for sex with a German person. Heydrich issued a decree on February 20

1942, which claimed to have had sexual intercourse between a German woman and a Russian worker or prisoner of war would result in the death penalty for the Russian man. Another decree issued by Himmler on December 7, 1942, stated that any 'unauthorized sexuality course' would result

in the death penalty. As the German Blood and Honor Protection Act did not allow capital punishment for racial defilement, special courts were convened to authorize the death penalty in some cases. German women accused of racial defilement marched through the streets with their heads shaved and a sign around their necks detailing his crime, and those convicted were sent to a concentration camp. When Himmler allegedly asked Hitler what the punishment should be for German girls and Germans who were convicted of racial smear with prisoners of war, he ordered that 'all prisoners of war who have sex with a German girl or a German would be shot' and the German woman should be publicly humiliated by 'having her hair skinned and being sent to a concentration camp.'

The German Girls' League was particularly seen as asking girls to avoid racial smear, which was treated with particular importance to young women.

Opposition to homosexuality

More information: Persecution of homosexuals Nazi Germany and the Holocaust

Homophobia: Berlin Memorial to Homosexual Victims of the Holocaust: Totgeschlagen- Totgeschwiegen (Struck Dead-Hushed Up.)

After the Night of the Long Knives, Hitler promoted Himmler and the SS, who then zealously repressed homosexuality, saying: 'We must exterminate these people root and branch ... the homosexual must be eliminated. In 1936, Himmler founded the Reichszentrale zur Bek-mpfung der Homosexualitet und Abtreibung ('Reich Central Office for the Combating of Homosexuality and Abortion.') The Nazi regime incarcerated some 100,000 homosexuals in the 1930s. As prisoners of concentration camps, gay men were forced to wear pink triangle badges. Nazi ideology still considered German homosexuals to be part of the Aryan master's race but tried to force them to conform to sexual and social norms. Gay men who would not change or feign a change in sexual orientation were sent to concentration camps as part of the 'Extermination through Work' campaign.

Religion

More information: Religious aspects of Nazism, Religion in Nazi Germany, positive Christianity,

German Christians and Kreuz und Adler

Members of the German Christian organization celebrating Luther Day in Berlin in 1933, speech Bishop Hossenfelder Hitler with Cesare Orsenigo, nuncio of the Catholic Church in Germany, in 1935 The Nazi Party's 1920

programmed guaranteed freedom for all non-hostile religious denominations and endorsed positive Christianity to fight the 'Judeo-materialist spirit.' It was a modified version of Christianity that emphasized racial purity and nationalism. The Nazis were helped by theologians, such as Ernst Bergmann. Bergmann, in his work, *die 25 Thesen der Deutsch Religion* (Twenty-five Points of the German religion,) concluded that the Old Testament and parts of the New Testament of the Bible were inaccurate. He claimed that Jesus was not Jewish but of Aryan origin, and that Adolf Hitler was the new messiah.

Hitler denounced the Old Testament as 'Satan Bible,' and using components of the New Testament tried to demonstrate that Jesus was Aryan and anti-Semitic, as in John 8:44 where Hitler noted that Jesus shouts to 'the Jews,' as well as Jesus telling the Jews that 'your father is the devil,' and describing Jesus' whip of 'The Devil's Children.' Hitler claimed that the New Testament included distortions of Paul the Apostle, whom Hitler described as a 'mass murderer turned saint.'

The Nazis used Protestant Martin Luther in their propaganda. They publicly posted an original Luther on the Jews and their lies during the annual gatherings in Nuremberg. The Nazis approved the German Christian Protestant organization.

The Nazis were initially very hostile to Catholics because most Catholics supported the German Centre Party. Catholics opposed the Nazis' promotion of sterilization of those considered inferior, and the Catholic Church forbade its members from voting for the Nazis. In 1933, major Nazi violence took place against Catholics because of their association with the Centre Party and their opposition to the Nazi regime's sterilization laws.

The Nazis demanded that Catholics declare their loyalty to the German state. In propaganda, the Nazis used elements of German Catholic history the German Catholic Teutonic Knights and their campaigns in Eastern Europe. The Nazis identified them as 'sentinels' in the East against 'Slavic chaos,' although beyond this symbolism the influence of the Teutonic Knights on Nazism was limited. Hitler also admitted that the nightly gatherings of the Nazis were inspired by the Catholic rituals he witnessed during his Catholic upbringing.

The Nazis sought official reconciliation with the Catholic Church and approved the creation of the pro-Nazi Catholic organization Kreuz und Adler, which supported national Catholicism. On 20 July 1933, a concordat (Reichskonkordat) was signed between Nazi Germany and the Catholic Church; in exchange for the acceptance of the Catholic Church in Germany, it demanded

that German Catholics be faithful to the German state. The Catholic Church then ended its ban on members supporting the Nazi party.

Historian Michael Burleigh argues that Nazism used Christianity for political purposes, but such use required that 'fundamental principles be stripped, but that the remaining diffuse religious emotion be used.'

Burleigh asserts that the conception of Nazism of spirituality was 'consciously pagan and primitive.' However, historian Roger Griffin rejects the assertion that Nazism was primarily pagan, noting that although there was some influential neogenesis in the Nazi party, such as Heinrich Himmler and Alfred Rosenberg, they represented a minority, and their views did not influence Nazi ideology beyond its use for symbolism; It should be noted that Hitler denounced Germanic paganism in *Mein Kampf*, and condemned the paganism of Rosenberg and Himmler as 'nonsense.'

Economy

More information: Economy of Nazi Germany and economy of fascism
Deutsches Volk- Deutsche Arbeit: German people, German Labour, the Alliance of Workers, and Labour (1934)
In general, Nazi theorists and politicians attributed Germany's past economic failures to political causes such as the influence of Marxism on the workforce, the sinister machinations, and

exploitation of what they called international Jewishness, and the vindictiveness of Western political leaders 'war reparation' requires.

Instead of traditional economic incentives, the Nazis proposed political solutions, such as the elimination of organized working groups, rearmament (in violation of the Treaty of Versailles), and biological policy. Various work programs designed to establish full employment for the German population were instituted once the Nazis took full national power. Hitler encouraged nationally supported projects such as the construction of the highway, the introduction of an affordable people's car (Volkswagen) and later the Nazis supported the economy through enterprise and employment generated by military rearmament.

Not only did the Nazis benefit at the beginning of the first post-depression economic recovery regime, their public works projects, their employment development programmed, and the subsidized home repair programmed, which reduced unemployment by 40% in one year, a development that tempered the unfavorable psychological climate caused by the previous economic crisis and encouraged Germans to walk in line with the regime.

To protect the German people and the currency from the volatility of market forces, the Nazis also promised social policies such as a national Labour

service, state-provided health care, guaranteed pensions, and an agrarian settlement program.

Agrarian policies were particularly important to the Nazis as they corresponded not only to the economy but also to their geopolitical conception of the Lebensraum. For Hitler, the acquisition of land and land was necessary to revive the German economy. To link farmers to their land, it was forbidden to sell farmland. Farm ownership was nominally private, but corporate monopoly rights were granted to marketing boards to control production and prices with a quota system.

The Nazis sought the support of the workers by declaring May 1, a day celebrated by organized labor, as a paid holiday and held celebrations on May 1, 1933, to honor German workers. The Nazis stressed that Germany must honor its workers. The regime believed that the only way to avoid a repeat of the 1918 disaster was to obtain workers' support for the German government.

The Nazis wanted all Germans to participate in the May Day celebrations in the hope that it would help break the class hostility between the workers and the bourgeoisie. Songs praising workers and workers were played on state radio throughout May 1, as well as fireworks and an air show in Berlin. Hitler referred to the workers as patriots who had built Germany's industrial force, had served honorably in the war, and claimed that they had been

oppressed by economic liberalism. Berliner Morgen post who had been strongly associated with the political left in the past welcomed the May Day celebrations of the regime.

The Nazis continued the social protection policies initiated by the governments of the Weimar Republic and mobilized volunteers to help

German 'worthy of race' through the National Socialist Social Welfare Organization. This organization oversaw charitable activities and became the largest civic organization in Nazi Germany. Successful efforts have been made to involve middle-class women in social work by helping large families. Winter relief campaigns served as a ritual to elicit public sympathy. The bonfires were made of different-colored schoolchildren's caps as a symbol of the abolition of class differences. Great celebrations and symbolism have been widely used to encourage those who engage in physical work on behalf of Germany, with leading National Socialists often praising the 'honor of work,' which fostered a sense of community (Gemeinschaft) for the German people and promoted solidarity with the Nazi cause.

Hitler believed that private property was useful in encouraging creative competition and technical innovation but insisted that it should conform to national interests and be 'productive' rather than 'parasitic. Private property

rights were conditional on the economic use; if it did not advance the Nazi economic objectives, then the state could nationalize it.

Although the Nazis privatized public property and public services, they also increased control of the economic state. Under the Nazi economy, free competition and self-regulation of markets declined; nevertheless, Hitler's social Darwinist beliefs made him reluctant to ignore business competition entirely and private property as economic drivers.

At the heart of the understanding of the National Socialist government and its economic policies is to reconcile with Hitler's fundamental vision of the German economy as an instrument of power. Hitler believed that the economy was not just about creating wealth and technical progress to improve the quality of life of a nation's citizens; economic success was paramount in that it provided the means and material foundations necessary for military conquest. While the economic progress generated by the National Socialist program had its role in appeasement of the German people, the Nazis, and Hitler did not believe that economic solutions alone were sufficient to push Germany on the stage as a world power. Therefore, the Nazis first sought to secure a command economy through general economic renewal accompanied by massive military expenditure for rearmament, particularly later by the implementation of the four-year plan, which consolidated their rule and firmly secured a command

relationship between the German arms industry and the National Socialist government. Between 1933 and 1939, military spending was more than 82 billion reichsmarks and accounted for 23 percent of Germany's gross national product as the Nazis mobilized their people and economy for war.

Anti-Communism

Historians Ian Kershaw and Joachim Fest argue that after the First World War, the Nazis were one of the many nationalist and fascist political parties vying for the leadership of the German anti-communist movement.

The Nazis claimed that communism was dangerous to the well-being of nations because it intended to dissolve private property, its support for class conflicts, its aggression against the middle class, its hostility to small businesses, and its atheism.

Nazism rejected socialism based on class conflicts and economic egalitarianism, instead favoring a stratified economy with social classes based on merit and talent, the maintenance of the private property, and the creation of national solidarity that transcends class distinction.

During the 1920s, Hitler urged disparate Nazi factions to unite in opposition to Jewish Bolshevism. Hitler claimed that the 'three vices' of 'Jewish Marxism' were democracy, pacifism, and internationalism.

In 1930, Hitler said: 'Our adopted term 'socialist' has nothing to do with Marxist socialism. Marxism is anti-property; true socialism is not. In 1942, Hitler said privately: 'I insist on the protection of private property ... we need to encourage private initiative.

In the late 1930s and 1940s, anti-communist regimes and groups

Nazism included Falange in Spain; the Vichy regime and the 33rd Waffen Grenadier Division of the SS Charlemagne (1st Frenchman) in France; and in Great Britain, the Cliveden Set, Lord Halifax, the British Union of Fascists under Sir Oswald Mosley, and Neville Chamberlain's associates.

Counter

An especially important influence was the losing side in the civil war that followed the Russian Revolution. After 1918, Tsarist exiles flocked to Munich and Berlin and disseminate theories on a

Jewish Bolshevik Conspiracy. Aufbau Vereeniging (Reconstruction Organization) was a counter-revolutionary conspiracy group based in Munich, composed of white Russian emigrants and the first German National Socialists. Michael Kellogg argues that Hitler's anti-Semitism was deepened and intensified by lengthy conversations with Fyodor Vinberg, a Russian-German member of the organization.

Anticapitalism

The Nazis argued that capitalism harms nations because of international finance, the economic dominance of big business, and Jewish influences. Nazi propaganda posters in working-class neighborhoods have focused on anti-capitalism, such as the one that said: 'Maintaining a rotten industrial system has nothing to do with nationalism. I can love Germany and hate capitalism.'

Adolf Hitler, both in public and in private, expressed contempt for capitalism, arguing that he holds ransom nations in the interest of a cosmopolitan renter parasitic class. He opposed the impulses of free-market capitalism in search of profits and wanted an economy in which community interests would be maintained.

Hitler distrusted capitalism because he was unreliable because of his selfishness, and he preferred a state-led economy subordinated to the volk's interests. Hitler said in 1927: 'We are socialists, we are enemies of today's capitalist economic system for exploiting the economically weak, with its unfair wages, with its unseemly assessment of a human being according to wealth and property instead of responsibility and performance, and we are determined to destroy this system under all conditions.'

Hitler told a party leader in 1934: 'The economic system of our time is the creation of the Jews.'

Hitler told Benito Mussolini that capitalism was 'running.' Hitler also said that the business bourgeoisie 'know nothing except their profit.' Homeland is just a word for them. Hitler was personally disgusted by Germany's ruling bourgeois elites during the Weimar period Republic, which he called cowardly.

In *Mein Kampf*, Hitler effectively supported mercantilism, in the belief that the economic resources of their respective territories should be seized by force; he believed that the Policy of Lebensraum would provide Germany with such economically valuable territories. He argued that the only way to maintain economic security was to have direct control over resources rather than being forced to depend on world trade. He argued that war to obtain such resources was the only way to overcome the failing capitalist economic system.

Many other Nazis had strong socialist and anti-capitalist revolutionary beliefs, first, Ernst Rghm, the leader of the

Sturmabteilung (SA.)

He claimed that the Nazis came to power as a national revolution but insisted that a socialist 'second revolution' was needed for Nazi ideology to be

fulfilled. The AS of Erhm has begun attacks on individuals considered to be associated with the conservative reaction.

Hitler regarded the independent actions of Racism as violating and threatening his leadership, as well as jeopardizing the regime by alienating conservative President Paul von Hindenburg and the conservative-oriented German army. This resulted in Hitler purgerhm and other radical members of the SA.

Another radical Nazi, Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels had stressed the socialist nature of Nazism and stated in his diary in the 1920s that if he had to choose between Bolshevism and capitalism, he said 'in the final analysis,' 'it would be better for us to go down with Bolshevism than to live in eternal slavery under capitalism.'

Totalitarianism

Under Nazism, with an emphasis on the nation, individual needs were subordinated to those of the community. Hitler stated that 'all the activity and needs of each individual will be regulated by the community represented by the party' and that 'there are no more free kingdoms in which the individual belongs to himself.' Himmler justified the establishment of a repressive police state, in

which the security forces could arbitrarily exercise power because national security and order should take precedence over the needs of the individual.

According to the famous philosopher and political theorist Hannah Arendt, the attraction of Nazism as a totalitarian ideology (with its mobilization of the German population) lay in the construction of helping this society to cope with the cognitive dissonance that results from the tragic interruption of the First World War, the economic and material suffering that led to the Depression and put an order in the revolutionary troubles that occur all around them. Instead of the plurality that existed in democratic or parliamentary states, Nazism as a totalitarian system promulgated 'clear' solutions to the historical problems facing Germany, supported it by delegitimizing the former Weimar government, and provided a political-biological path to a better future, free from the uncertainty of the past. It is the atomized and disgruntled masses that Hitler and the party elite have pointed in a particular direction and using intelligent propaganda to turn them into ideological followers, exploited to bring Nazism to life.

While the ideologies of Nazism, like those of Stalinism, abhor democratic or parliamentary governance practiced in the United States or Great Britain, their differences are substantial. An epistemic crisis occurs when attempts are made to synthesize and contrast Nazism and Stalinism as two sides of the same coin with their equally tyrannical leaders, state-controlled

economies, and repressive police structures; namely since although they share a common thematic political construct, they are entirely unconscionable to each other in their worldviews and when analyzed more carefully against each other at an individual level, an 'irreconcilable asymmetry' results.

Post-war Nazism

After the defeat of Nazi Germany during World War II and the end of the Holocaust, clear expressions of support for Nazi ideas were banned in Germany and other European countries. Nevertheless, movements that identify as national socialists or are described as adhering to National Socialism continue to exist on the margins of politics in many Western societies. Usually by espousing a white supremacist ideology, many deliberately adopt the symbols of Nazi Germany.

Josef Mengele (March 16, 1911-February 7, 1979) was a German officer and physician from Schutzstaffel (SS) in the Auschwitz concentration camp during World War II. Mengele was a notorious member of the team of doctors responsible for selecting victims to kill in gas chambers and conducting deadly human experiments on prisoners. Arrivals deemed fit for work were admitted to the camp, and those deemed unfit for work were immediately killed in the gas chambers. Mengele left Auschwitz on January 17, 1945, shortly

before the arrival of the Red Army's liberating troops. After the war, he fled to South America, where he escaped capture for the rest of his life.

Mengele received doctorates in anthropology and medicine from the University of Munich and began a career as a researcher. He joined the Nazi Party in 1937 and the SS in 1938. First appointed chief medical officer of the battalion at the beginning of the Second World War, he was transferred to the concentration camp service in early 1943 and posted to Auschwitz. There, he saw an opportunity to conduct genetic research on human subjects. His subsequent experiences, focusing primarily on twins, had no regard for the health or safety of the victims.

Aided by a network of former SS members, Mengele traveled to Argentina in July 1949. He first lived in and around Buenos Aires, then fled to Paraguay in 1959 and Brazil in 1960 while wanted by West Germany, Israel, and Nazi hunters like Simon Wiesenthal so that he could be brought to justice. Despite requests for extradition from the West German government and clandestine operations by Mossad (the Israeli intelligence agency), Mengele escaped capture. He drowned while swimming off the coast of Brazil in 1979 and was buried under a false name. His remains were disinterred and positively identified by forensic examination in 1985.

Small life and education

Mengele was born the eldest of three children on March 16, 1911, in Karl and Walburga (Hupfauer) Mengele in Gunzburg, Bavaria, Germany. His younger brothers were Karl Jr and Alois. Mengele's father is the founder of Karl Mengele and Sons, a producer of agricultural machinery. Mengele did well at school and developed an interest in music, art, and skiing. He graduated from high school in April 1930 and continued his medical studies at

Goethe University Frankfurt and Philosophy at the University of Munich. Munich was the seat of the Nazi party. In 1931, Mengele joined the Stahlhelm, Bund der Frontsoldaten, a paramilitary organization that was absorbed in 1934 in the Nazi Sturmabteilung (Storm

Detachment; SA.)

In 1935, Mengele obtained a doctorate in anthropology from the University of Munich. In January 1937, at the Institute of Hereditary Biology and Hygiene in Frankfurt, he became the assistant of Dr. Otmar Freiherr von Verschuer, a scientist researching genetics, with a particular interest in twins.

As von Verschuer's assistant, Mengele focused on the genetic factors resulting in a cleft lip and cleft palate or chin. His thesis on the subject earned him a doctorate cum laude in medicine in 1938. His two degrees were later canceled by the issuing universities. In a letter of recommendation, von

Verschuer praised Mengele's reliability and ability to verbally present complex documents. The American author Robert Jay Lifton notes that the work published by Mengele did not deviate much from the prevailing scientific current of the time and would have been considered a valid scientific effort, even outside the borders of Nazi Germany.

On July 28, 1939, Mengele married Irene Schonbein, whom he had met while working as a medical resident in Leipzig. Their only son, Rolf, was born in 1944.

Military service

The ideology of Nazism brought together elements of anti-Semitism, racial hygiene, and eugenics, and combined them with pan-Germanism and territorial expansionism to obtain more Lebensraum (living space) for the Germanic people. Nazi Germany attempted to gain this unfamiliar territory by attacking Poland and the Soviet Union, to expel or kill the Jews and Slavs who lived there, who were considered inferior to the Aryan masters.

Mengele joined the Nazi party in 1937 and the Schutzstaffel (SS; Protection Squadron) in 1938. He received basic training in 1938 with the Gebirgsjoger (mountain infantry) and was called for service in the Wehrmacht (German armed forces) in June 1940, a few months after the outbreak of World

War II. He soon volunteered for the medical service in the Waffen-SS, the combat branch of the SS, where he served with the rank of SS Untersturmführer (sub-lieutenant) in a medical reserve battalion until November 1940. He was then assigned to the SS-Rasse-und Siedlungshauptamt (SS Race and Resettlement Main Office) in Posen, assessing candidates for Germanization.

In June 1941, Mengele was posted to Ukraine, where he received the Class. In January 1942, he joined the 5th SS Wiking Panzer Division as a battalion physician officer. He saved two German soldiers from a burning tank and received the First-Class Iron Cross, as well as the black wound badge and medal for the care of the German people. Seriously wounded in action near Rostov-on-Don in mid-1942, he was declared unfit to continue his active service. After his recovery, he was transferred to the Race and Resettlement Office in Berlin. He also resumed his association with von Verschuer, who was at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for

Anthropology, human genetics, and eugenics.

Mengele was promoted to the rank of SS Hauptsturmführer (captain) in April 1943.

Auschwitz

In early 1943, encouraged by von Verschuer, Mengele applied for the transfer to the concentration camp service, where he planned the possibility of undertaking genetic research on human subjects. His application was accepted, and he was assigned to the Auschwitz concentration camp. He was appointed by SS-Standortarzt Eduard Wirths, Chief Medical Officer at Auschwitz, as Chief Medical Officer of the Zigeuner-family-lager (Roma Family Camp), located in the Birkenau subcamp.

'Selection' of Hungarian Jews on the ramp Auschwitz-II (Birkenau,) May/June 1944 at the end of 1941, Hitler decided that the Jews of Europe should be exterminated, so that Birkenau, originally intended to house slave laborers, was reused as a combined labor camp/extermination camp. The prisoners were transported there by rail from all over Germany-occupied Europe, arriving in daily convoys. In July 1942, the SS made 'selections.' The incoming Jews were separated; those deemed fit to work were admitted to the camp, and those deemed unfit for work were immediately killed in the gas chambers. The group chosen to die, about three-quarters of the total- included all children, women with young children, pregnant women, all the elderly, and all those who appeared on the brief and superficial inspection by an SS doctor not to be completely fit. Mengele, a member of the team of doctors responsible for making selections, undertook this work even though he was not tasked with

doing so in the hope of finding subjects for his experiments. He was particularly interested in locating sets of twins. Unlike most doctors, who considered selections to be one of their most stressful and horrific tasks, Mengele took on the task with a flamboyant air, often smiling or whistling.

Mengele and other SS doctors did not treat the inmates but supervised the activities of the inmates forced to work in the camp's medical ward. Mengele goes to the hospital barracks every week and sends all the prisoners who have not recovered after two weeks in bed to the gas chambers. He was also part of the team of doctors overseeing the administration of Zyklon B, the cyanide-based pesticide that was used to kill people in the Birkenau gas chambers. He served in the gas chambers located in the Crematoriums IV and V.

When an outbreak of noma (a bacterial gangrene disease of the mouth and face) broke out in the Roma camp in 1943, Mengele launched a study to determine the cause of the disease and develop treatment. He enlisted the help of prisoner Berthold Epstein, a Jewish pediatrician, and professor at the University of Prague. Mengele isolated the patients in a separate barracks and had several distressed children killed so that their preserved heads and organs could be sent to the SS Medical Academy in Graz and other facilities for study. The search continued when the Roma camp was liquidated, and its other occupants were killed in 1944.

In response to a typhus outbreak in the women's camp, Mengele authorized a block of 600 Jewish women and sent them to the gas chamber. The building was then cleaned and disinfected, and the occupants of a nearby block were bathed, unpacked, and given new clothes before being moved to the clean block. The process was repeated until all barracks were disinfected. Similar disinfectants were used for subsequent outbreaks of scarlet fever and other diseases, but with all sick prisoners sent to the gas chambers. For his efforts, Mengele was awarded the Cross of War Merit (second class with swords) and was promoted in 1944 to the first doctor of the Birkenau subcamp.

Human experimentation

Mengele took advantage of Auschwitz to continue his anthropological studies and research on heredity, using inmates for human experimentation. The experiments had no regard for the health or safety of the victims. He was particularly interested in identical twins, people with heterochromia iridium (eyes of two assorted colors), dwarfs, and people with physical abnormalities. A grant was granted by the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft, requested by von Verschuer, who regularly received reports and shipments of Mengele specimens. The grant was used to build a pathology laboratory attached to the Crematorium II of Auschwitz II-Birkenau. Dr. Miklós Nyiszli, a Hungarian Jewish pathologist who arrived in Auschwitz on 29 May 1944, performed dissections

and prepared specimens for shipping to the laboratory. Mengele's twin research was intended in part to prove the supremacy of heredity over the environment and thus reinforce the Nazi premise of the superiority of the Aryan race. Nyiszli and others report that the twins' studies may also have been motivated by a desire to improve the reproductive rate of the German race by improving the chances of racially desirable people having twins.

Mengele's research subjects were better fed and housed than other prisoners and temporarily sheltered from gas chambers. He created a kindergarten that was the subject of experiments, with all Roma children under the age of six. The property offered better food and living conditions than other areas of the camp and even included a playground.

Visiting his child subjects, he introduced himself as 'Uncle Mengele' and offered them sweets. Nevertheless, he was also personally responsible for the deaths of an unknown number of victims whom he killed by lethal injection, shootings, beatings, and by fatal selections and experiments. Lifton described Mengele as sadistic, empathetic, and extremely anti-Semitic, believing that Jews should be eliminated as an inferior and dangerous race. Rolf, Mengele's son, said his father no longer had any remorse for his wartime activities.

A former doctor prisoner of Auschwitz said: He was able to be so kind to children, to make them love, to bring them sugar, to think of minute

details in their daily lives, and to do things that we would admire ... And then, next to that, ... the crematoriums are smoking, and these children, tomorrow or in half an hour, he is going to send them there. That is where the anomaly is.

Jewish twins were kept alive for use in Mengele's medical experiments. These children were released from Auschwitz by the Red Army in January 1945. The twins were subjected to weekly examinations and measurements of their physical attributes by Mengele or one of her assistants. Mengele's experiments on twins included unnecessary limb amputation, intentionally infecting a twin with typhus or other diseases, and transfusing blood from one twin to another. Many of the victims died because of these procedures. After the end of an experiment, the twins were sometimes killed, and their bodies dissected. Nyiszli remembered an occasion when Mengele personally killed fourteen twins in one night by injecting chloroform into the heart. If one twin died of the disease, Mengele would kill the other so that post-mortem comparative reports could be prepared.

Mengele's eye experiments included attempts to change eye color by injecting chemicals into the eyes of living subjects and killing people with heterochromia eyes so that the eyes could be removed and sent to Berlin for study. His experiments on dwarfs and people with physical abnormalities included taking physical measurements, drawing blood, extracting healthy teeth,

and treating with unnecessary medications and X-rays. Many victims were sent to the gas chambers after about two weeks, and their skeletons were sent to Berlin for further study.

Mengele looked for pregnant women, on whom he would perform experiments before sending them to the gas chambers. Witness Vera Alexander described how he sewed two Roma twins back-to-back to create conjoined twins. The children died of gangrene after several days of suffering.

After Auschwitz

Along with several other Auschwitz doctors, Mengele was transferred to the Gross Rosen concentration camp in Lower Silesia on 17 January 1945. He brought two boxes of specimens and recordings of his experiments. Most of the camp's medical records had already been destroyed by the SS.

The Red Army captured Auschwitz on January 27. Mengele fled Gross Rosen on 18 February, a week before the Soviets arrived, and traveled west disguised as an officer of the Wehrmacht to Saaz (now Aatec.) It was there that he temporarily entrusted his incriminating Auschwitz documents to a nurse with whom he had entered a relationship.

He and his unit rushed west to avoid capture by the Soviets and were taken prisoner of war by the Americans in June. Mengele was initially registered

under his name, but due to the Allies' disorganization regarding the distribution of the wanted lists and the fact that Mengele did not have the usual SS blood type tattoo, he was not identified as being on the list of major war criminals. He was released at the end of July and obtained false papers under the name 'Fritz'

Ullman's documents, which he later amended to read 'Fritz Hollmann.'

After several months on the run, including a trip to the Soviet-occupied area to retrieve his Auschwitz files, Mengele found work near Rosenheim as a farm laborer. Fearing that his capture would mean a trial and a death sentence, he fled Germany on 17 April 1949.

Aided by a network of former SS members, Mengele went to Genoa, where he obtained a passport under the pseudonym 'Helmut Gregor' of the International Committee of the Red Cross. He sailed to Argentina in July. His wife refused to accompany him, and they divorced in 1954.

In South America

In Buenos Aires, Argentina, Mengele worked as a carpenter while living in a boarding house in the suburbs of Vicente Lopez. After a few weeks, he moved to the home of a Nazi sympathizer in Florida's wealthier neighborhood, Buenos Aires. He then worked as a salesperson for the family

farm equipment business, and from 1951 he made frequent trips to Paraguay as a sales representative for that region. An apartment in the center of Buenos Aires became his residence in

1953, the same year, he used family funds to buy part of the interest in the carpentry business. In 1954, he rented a house in the suburbs of Olivos. Records released by the Argentine government in 1992 indicate that Mengele may have practiced medicine without a license, including abortion, while living in Buenos Aires.

Photo of Mengele's Argentinian identity document (1956) After obtaining a copy of his birth certificate through the West German Embassy in 1956, Mengele obtained an Argentine foreign residence permit under his real name. He used this document to obtain a West German passport, also of his real name and embarked on a visit to Europe.

He met in Switzerland for a ski holiday with his son Rolf (who was said Mengele was his 'Uncle Fritz') and his widowed sister-in-law Martha and spent a week in his hometown of Gozburg.

On his return to Argentina in September,

Mengele started living under her real name. Martha and her son Karl Heinz followed about a month later, and the three took up residence together.

The couple married while on vacation in Uruguay in 1958 and bought a house in Buenos Aires. Commercial interests now included part of the property of Fadro Farm, a pharmaceutical company.

Along with several other doctors, Mengele was questioned and released in 1958 on suspicion of practicing medicine without a license after the death of a teenage girl following an abortion. Fearing that publicity would lead to the discovery of his Nazi origins and wartime activities, he made a long business trip to Paraguay and obtained citizenship under the name José Mengele in 1959.

He returned to Buenos Aires several times to close his business and visit his family. Martha and Karl Heinz lived in a boarding house in the city until December 1960, when they returned to Germany.

Pearl Harbor is a lagoon port on the island of Oahu, Hawaii, west of Honolulu. Much of the harbor and surrounding land is a deep-water naval base of the United States Navy. It is also the headquarters of the U.S. Pacific Fleet. The U.S. government obtained for the first time the exclusive use of the entrance and the right to maintain a repair and coal station for ships here in 1887. The attack on Pearl Harbor by the Empire of Japan on December 7, 1941, was the immediate cause of the United States

States enter World War II

Mengele's name was mentioned several times during the Nuremberg trials, but Allied forces were convinced he was dead. Irene and her family in Gozburg also said that he was dead. Working in Germany, Nazi hunters Simon Wiesenthal and Hermann Langbein gathered information from witnesses about Mengele's wartime activities. During a search of the public archives, Langbein found

Mengele's divorce papers listing an address in

Buenos Aires. He and Wiesenthal pressured the West German authorities to prepare an arrest warrant on 5 June 1959 and open extradition proceedings. Initially, Argentina refused the request, because the fugitive no longer lived at the address given on the documents. By the time the extradition was approved on 30 June 1960, Mengele had already fled to Paraguay, where he lived on a farm near the Argentine border.

Efforts du Mossad

In May 1960, Isser Harel, director of Mossad (the Israeli intelligence agency), personally led the successful effort to capture Adolf Eichmann in Buenos Aires. He also hoped to find Mengele so that he too could be brought to justice in Israel. When questioned, Eichmann provided the address of a boarding

house that had served as a hide-in for Nazi fugitives. Monitoring of the house did not reveal Mengele or any family members, and the neighborhood mail carrier said that although Mengele had recently received letters under his real name, he had since moved, leaving no address to pass on. Harel's inquiries at a machine shop where Mengele had been a co-owner also did not lead to a lead, so he had to give up.

Despite having provided Mengele with legal documents of his real name in 1956, allowing him to regularize his residence in Argentina, West Germany offered a reward for his capture. Continued media coverage of its wartime activities

(Accompanied by photographs of the fugitive) led Mengele to move again in 1960. Former bomber pilot Hans-Ulrich Rudel put him in touch with Nazi supporter Wolfgang Gerhard, who helped Mengele cross the border into Brazil. He stayed with Gerhard on his farm near Sao Paulo until more permanent accommodation was found with Hungarian ex-pats Geza and Gitta Stuttering. Aided by an investment from Mengele, the couple bought a farm in Nova Europa, and Mengele was given the managerial position.

In 1962, the three bought a coffee and cattle farm in Serra Negra, with Mengele owning half a stake. Initially, Gerhard told the couple that Mengele's name was 'Peter Hochbichler,' but they discovered his identity in 1963. Gerhard

convinced them not to report Mengele's location to the authorities, saying they could get into trouble to house the fugitive. West Germany, warned of the possibility of Mengele having settled there, expanded its extradition request to include Brazil in February 1961.

Meanwhile, Zvi Aharoni, one of the Mossad agents who had been involved in the Eichmann capture, was placed in charge of a team of agents tasked with locating Mengele and bringing him to justice in Israel. Investigations in Paraguay yielded no clues as to his whereabouts, and they were unable to intercept any correspondence between Mengele and his wife Martha, who was living in Italy at the time. Next agents

Rudel's movements did not produce any leads. Aharoni and his team followed Gerhard to a rural area near Sao Paulo, where they located a European believed to be Mengele. Aharoni reported his findings to Harel, but the coordination of staging a capture, budgetary constraints, and the need to focus on the deterioration of the nation's relations with Egypt led the Mossad leader to end the operation in 1962.

Later life and death

Mengele and the Stammers bought a house on a farm in Caieiras in 1969, with Mengele as half-owner. When Wolfgang Gerhard returned to

Germany in 1971 to seek treatment for his seriously ill wife and son, he gave Mengele his identity card. The Stammers had a falling out with Mengele at the end of 1974 and bought a house in Sao Paulo; Mengele was not invited. (b) The Begayeurs bought a bungalow in Eldorado, Sao Paulo, which they rented from Mengele. Rolf, who had not seen his father since the ski holidays in 1956, visited him in 1977 and found an unrepentant Nazi who claimed to have never personally harmed anyone and had only done his duty.

Mengele's health had been deteriorating since 1972, and he had a stroke in 1976. He had high blood pressure and an ear infection that had an impact on his balance. Visiting his friends Wolfram and Liselotte Bossert in the seaside resort of Bertioga on February 7, 1979, he suffered another stroke while swimming and drowning. Mengele was buried in Embu das Artes under the name 'Wolfgang Gerhard,' whose identity card he had been using ever since. Other pseudonyms used by Mengele include Fausto Rind and S.

Josi Alvers Aspiazu.

Exhumation

Meanwhile, Mengele sightings have been reported all over the world. Wiesenthal claimed to have information that placed Mengele on the Greek island of Kythnos in 1960, Cairo in 1961, Spain in 1971, and Paraguay in 1978,

eighteen years after his departure. He insisted until 1985 six years after Mengele's death—that he was still alive,

1982 offering a \$100,000 reward for his capture. Global interest in the case was raised by a mock trial in Jerusalem in February 1985 that heard from more than 100 victims of Mengele's experiences. Shortly thereafter, the governments of Germany, Israel, and the United States launched a coordinated effort to determine Mengele's place. The Israeli and West German governments, the Washington Times, and the Simon Wiesenthal Center offered awards for his capture.

On 31 May 1985, acting on a tip received by the West German prosecutor's office, the police searched the house of Hans Sedlmeier, a long-time friend of

Mengele and commercial director of the family business in

Günzburg. They found a coded address book and copies of letters to and from Mengele. Among the newspapers was a letter from Bossert informing Sedlmeier of Mengele's death. The German authorities alerted the police in Sao Paulo, who contacted the Bossert's. When questioned, they revealed the location of the tomb.

The remains were exhumed on June 6, 1985, and a thorough forensic examination confirmed with a high probability that the body was

À Mengele. Rolf Mengele stated on 10 June admitting that the body was his father's. He said the news of his father's death had been kept secret to protect the people who had sheltered his father for so many years. In 1992, DNA tests verified Mengele's identity. The family refused to allow the remains to be repatriated to Germany, and they remain stored at the Institute of Medicine and Legal Law in SaoPaulo Medicine.

Heritage

Mengele's life was the inspiration for a novel and film called *The Boys from Brazil* (1978,) in which a fictional Mengele (played by Gregory Peck) produced Hitler clones in a clinic in Brazil. (117) In 2007, the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum donated the album H-cker, an album of photographs of Auschwitz staff taken by Karl-Friedrich Hucker. Eight of the photographs include Mengele.

In February 2010, a 180-page volume of Mengele's diary was auctioned off for an undisclosed sum to the grandson of a Holocaust survivor. The unidentified former owner, who acquired the newspapers in Brazil, is said to have been close to the Mengele family. One Holocaust survivor organization

described the sale as 'a cynical act of exploitation aimed at profiting from the writings of one of the most heinous Nazi criminals.' Rabbi Marvin Yesterday of the Simon Wiesenthal Centre was pleased to see the newspaper fall into Jewish hands. 'At a time when Ahmadinejad's Iran regularly denies the Holocaust and anti-Semitism and hatred of Jews is back in vogue, this acquisition is particularly important,' he said. In 2011, another 31 volumes of Mengele's diaries were sold — still during the protests — by the same auction house to an undisclosed collector of World War II memorabilia for \$245,000.

The Jews, also known as the Jewish people, are an ethnoreligious group originating from the Israelites, or Hebrews, of the Old Middle East. Jewish ethnicity, nation, and religion are highly interdependent, as Judaism is the traditional faith of the Jewish nation, while its observance varies from strict adherence to complete non-observation.

The Jews trace their ethnogenesis to the part of the Levant known as the Land of Israel. The discovery of the Merneptah stele confirms the existence of the people of Israel in Canaan as early as the 13th century BC. J.C. disputed - discuss since then, while maintaining power over their homeland for certain periods -as under the Kingdom of Israel, the Kingdom of Judah, the Hasmonean dynasty, and the Herodian kingdom- the Jews also suffered various exiles and occupations of their homeland-ancient Egypt Occupation of the Levant,

Assyrian captivity and Exile, Babylonian captivity and exile, Greek occupation and exile, Roman occupation, and exile. These events subjected Jews to slavery, pogroms, cultural assimilation, forced evictions, genocide, and more, the dispersal of Jews all over the world, in what is known today as the Jewish diaspora.

The world's Jewish population peaked at 16.7 million before World War II, but about 6 million Jews were systematically murdered during the Holocaust. Since then, the population has slowly increased again, and in 2014 was estimated at 14.2 million by the North American Jewish Data Bank, or less than 0.2% of the world's total population (about one in 514 people.)

Franklin Delano Roosevelt (January 30, 1882-April 12, 1945,) commonly known as FDR, was an American political leader and political leader who served as president of the United States from 1933 to 1945. A Democrat, he won a record four elections and dominated his party for many years as a central figure in world events in the mid-20th century, leading the United States at a time of global economic depression and total war. Its relief, recovery, and reform program, known as the New Deal, has involved a major expansion of the federal government's role in the economy. As the dominant leader of the Democratic Party, he built the New Deal Coalition that brought together and united unions, big-city machines, white ethnic groups, African Americans, and

rural white Southerners to support the party. The Coalition significantly realigned American politics after 1932, creating the Fifth Party System and defining American liberalism throughout the middle third of the 20th century.

Roosevelt was born in 1882, into a prominent elderly Dutch family in Dutchess County, New York. He attended elite educational institutions in Groton School and Harvard College. At the age of 23, in 1905, he married Eleanor Roosevelt, with whom he had six children. He entered politics in 1910, serving in the New York State Senate and then as assistant secretary of the Navy under President Woodrow Wilson. In 1920, Roosevelt ran for vice-president with presidential candidate James M. Cox, but the Cox/Roosevelt ticket lost Republican Ticket by Warren Harding and Calvin Coolidge. Roosevelt was struck down by debilitating polio in 1921, which cost him the use of his legs and put his future political career at risk, but he tried to recover from the disease and founded the treatment center for people with polio in Warm Springs, Georgia. After his return to politics by nominating Alfred E. Smith for the 1924 Democratic National Convention, Roosevelt, at Smith's request, successfully ran for governor of New York in 1928. In-office from 1929 to 1932, he was a reformist governor to promote the adoption of programs to combat the Great Depression that upset the United States at the time.

In 1932, in the depths of the Great Depression, Roosevelt successfully defeated incumbent Republican president Herbert Hoover to win the presidency of the United States. With its victory over its polio, the FDR has relied on its persistent optimism and activism to renew the national spirit. During his first hundred days in office, which began March 4, 1933, Roosevelt spearheaded unprecedented major legislation and issued a profusion of decrees that instituted the New Deal-a variety of programs designed to produce relief (government jobs for the unemployed,) recovery (economic growth,) and reform (through Wall Street regulation, banks, and transportation.) It has created many programs to support the unemployed and farmers and to encourage union growth while more tightly regulating businesses and high finance. The repeal of Prohibition in 1933 added to his popularity, helping him win re-election by a landslide in 1936. The economy rapidly improved from 1933 to 1937, then relapsed into a deep recession in 1937-38. The bipartisan Conservative Coalition that formed in 1937 prevented it from wrapping the Supreme Court and blocked all major Liberal bills (except the minimum wage, which was passed.)) When the war began and unemployment ended, congressional conservatives repealed the two main relief programs, the APA and the CCC. However, they have retained most of the business regulations. In addition to several smaller programs, the main programs are securities and exchange commission, la Loi Wagner, la Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation et la Sécurité Sociale.

As the Second World War loomed after 1938, the Japanese invasion of China, and aggression from Nazi Germany, Roosevelt gave strong diplomatic and financial support to China and the United Kingdom, while remaining officially neutral. Its goal was to make America the Arsenal of

democracy,' which would provide ammunition for the Allies. In March 1941, Roosevelt, with Congressional approval, provided loan-to-lease assistance to Britain and China. Following the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941, which he called 'a date that will live in infamy,' Roosevelt sought and obtained the rapid approval, on December 8, of the United States Congress to declare war on Japan and, a few days later, on Germany. Assisted by his principal assistant Harry Hopkins, and with extraordinarily strong national support, he worked closely with British Prime Minister Winston Churchill, Soviet leader Joseph Stalin, and Chinese General Generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek led the Allies against Nazi Germany, Fascist Italy, and Imperial Japan during World War II. He oversaw the mobilization of the U.S. economy to support the war effort and ordered the internment of 100,000 American civilians of Japanese descent. As an active military leader, Roosevelt implemented a two-front war strategy that ended with the defeat of the Axis powers and the development of the world's first nuclear bomb. His work also influenced the later creation of the United Nations and Bretton Woods. During

the war, unemployment fell to 2%, relief programs ended, and the industrial economy grew rapidly to new heights as millions of people moved to wartime factory jobs or entered military service. Roosevelt's health declined sharply during the war years, and he died three months after his fourth term. He is often regarded by scholars as one of the top three presidents of the United States, along with Abraham Lincoln and George Washington.

The United States, with the consent of the United Kingdom as stipulated in the Quebec Agreement, dropped nuclear weapons on the Japanese cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki in August 1945, during the final stage of World War II. The two attacks, which killed at least 129,000 people, remain the only use of nuclear weapons for war in history.

In the last year of the war, the Allies were preparing for what was intended to be an expensive invasion of the Japanese continent. This was preceded by a U.S. bombing campaign that wiped out many Japanese cities. The war in Europe ended when Nazi Germany signed its surrender instrument on May 8, 1945. The Japanese, faced with the same fate, refused to accept the Allies' demands for unconditional surrender and the Pacific War continued. Together with the United Kingdom and China, the United States called for the unconditional surrender of the Japanese armed forces in the Potsdam

Declaration on 26 July 1945, the alternative being 'rapid and total destruction.'

The Japanese response to this ultimatum was to ignore it.

In July 1945, the Allied Manhattan Project successfully detonated an atomic bomb in the New Mexico desert, and in August it produced atomic weapons based on two alternative designs. Lla

The 509th U.S. Air Force Composite Group was equipped with the Silverplate specialized version of the Boeing B-29 super fortress, which could deliver them from Tinian to the Mariana Islands.

On August 6, the United States dropped a uranium-weapon atomic bomb (Little Boy) on Hiroshima. U.S. President Harry S. Truman called for Japan's surrender 16 hours later, warning them to 'expect a rain of air ruin, the kind of which has never been seen on this earth.' Three days later, on August 9, the United States dropped a plutonium-like-type bomb (Fat Man) on the city of Nagasaki. In the first two to four months of bombing, the acute effects of atomic bombing killed 90,000 to 146,000 people

Hiroshima and 39,000 to 80,000 in Nagasaki; about half of the deaths in each city occurred on the first day. Over the next few months, many died from burns, radiation, and other injuries, aggravated by disease and malnutrition.

In both cities, most of the dead were civilians, although Hiroshima had a large military garrison.

On 15 August, six days after the bombing

Nagasaki and the Soviet Union's declaration of war,

Japan announced its surrender to the Allies. On 2 September, he signed the surrender instrument, ending the Second World War. The role of bombing in Japan's surrender and its ethical justification is still debated.

In November 1942, with the United States now leaving a warring party, not just a neutral spectator, the age project expanded; men between the age of 18 and 37 were now eligible. Blacks were passed on for the project because of racist assumptions about their abilities and the viability of a Métis army.

But that changed in 1943 when a 'quota' was imposed, intended to limit the number of blacks drafted to reflect their number in the overall population, about 10.6 percent of the total. Initially, blacks were limited to 'work units,' but this too ended as the war progressed when they were finally used in combat.

a person who was born in the United States between 1917 and 1921 and who, as a retiree, received smaller increases in social security than others

after Congress has readjusted social security benefits 1977. The origin of the Notch Baby Expand Baby boomers are people born during the demographic baby boom of World War II, about 1946 to 1964, giving an age range between 51 and 70 years from 2016.

According to the U.S. Census Bureau, the term- 'baby boomer' is also used in a cultural context.

A crematorium is an installation that houses a cremator with a cremation chamber or a riposte. In this room, the body of a deceased is cremated and thus reduced to skeletal remains and bone fragments. Cremation chambers are usually lined with heat-resistant refractory bricks.

Fences surround the Auschwitz concentration camp. An estimated 1,000,000 to 2,500,000 people (about twice the population of Hawaii) were exterminated in the camp. A row of chimneys at the top of the crematorium, where bodies were burned.

Hungarian prisoners arrive at the Auschwitz concentration camp, about 50 km (about 31.07 mi) west of Krakow, Poland, in the spring of 1945.

The September 11 attacks (also known as September 11, September 11, Dey or September 11) (nb 1) were a series of four coordinated terrorist attacks carried out by the Islamist terrorist group al-Qaeda in the United States

on the morning of Tuesday, September 11, 2001. The attacks consisted of suicide bombings used to target symbolic American monuments.

Four passenger airliners — all of which took off from airports on the East Coast of the United States bound for California —were hijacked by 19 al-Qaeda terrorists to be flown in ships. Two of the planes, American Airlines Flight 11 and United Airlines Flight 175 crashed in the North and South Towers, respectively, of the World Trade Center complex in New York. In less than an hour and 42 minutes, the two 110-story towers collapsed, with debris and the resulting fires causing the partial or complete collapse of all other buildings in the World Trade Center complex, including the 47story 7 World Trade Center tower, as well as extensive damage to ten other large surrounding structures. A third aircraft, American Airlines Flight 77, crashed into the Pentagon (headquarters of the U.S. Department of Defense) in Arlington County, Virginia, causing a partial collapse on the west side of the Pentagon. The fourth plane, United Airlines Flight 93, was initially headed for Washington, D.C., but crashed in a field near Shanksville, Pennsylvania, after its passengers tried to overcome the hijackers. In total, the attacks claimed the lives of 2,996 people (including 19 hijackers) and caused at least \$10 billion (about \$31 per person in the US) in property and infrastructure damage and \$3 trillion (about \$9,200 per person in the US) (about \$9,200 per person in the US) in total costs. This is the

deadliest incident for firefighters and law enforcement in U.S. history, with 343 and 72 deaths, respectively.

Suspicious of the attack quickly fell on al-Qaeda. The United States responded to these attacks by launching the war on terror and invading Afghanistan to remove the Taliban, who had harbored al-Qaeda. Many countries have strengthened their anti-terrorism legislation and expanded the powers of law enforcement and intelligence agencies to prevent terrorist attacks. Although al-Qaeda leader Osama bin Laden initially denied any involvement, he claimed responsibility for the attacks in 2004. Al-Qaeda and Bin Laden cited U.S. support for Israel, the presence of U.S. troops in Saudi Arabia, and sanctions against Iraq as grounds.

After escaping capture for a decade, bin Laden was located and killed by members of the U.S. military in May 2011.

The destruction of the World Trade Center and surrounding infrastructure caused severe damage to the Lower Manhattan economy and had a significant impact on global markets, closing Wall Street until September 17 and civilian airspace in the United States and Canada until September 13. Numerous closures, evacuations, and cancellations followed, out of respect or fear of further attacks. The clean-up of the World Trade Center site was completed in May

2002, and the Pentagon was repaired in less than a year.

On November 18, 2006, the construction of One World

The Trade Center started on the World Trade Center website.

The building was officially inaugurated on November 3, 2014. Many memorials have been built, including the National September 11 Memorial and Museum in New York, the Pentagon Memorial in Arlington County, Virginia, and the Flight 93 National Memorial in a field near Shanksville, Pennsylvania.

The First World War (World War I), also known as the First World War, or The Great War, was a European-centered world war that began on July 28, 1914, and lasted until November 11, 1918. More than 70 million military personnel, including 60 million Europeans, have been mobilized in one of the greatest wars in history. More than 9 million combatants and 7 million civilians died because of the war (including victims of many genocides), a casualty rate exacerbated by the technological and industrial sophistication of the belligerents, and the tactical stalemate caused by trench warfare, an exhausting form of war in which the defender held the advantage. It was one of the deadliest conflicts in history and paved the way for major political changes, including revolutions in many of the nations involved.

The war attracted all the world's major economic powers, united in two opposing alliances: the Allies (based on the Triple Agreement of the United Kingdom/British Empire, France, and Russia and the central powers of Germany and Austria-Hungary. Although Italy was also a member of the Triple Alliance alongside Germany and Austria-Hungary, it did not join the central powers, as Austria-Hungary went on the offensive against the terms of the alliance. These alliances have been reorganized and expanded as increased nations go to war: Italy, Japan, and the United States join the Allies, while the Ottoman Empire and Bulgaria join the central powers.

The trigger for the war was the assassination of Archduke François-Ferdinand of Austria, heir to the Austrian-Hungarian throne, by the Yugoslav nationalist Gavrilo Princip in Sarajevo on 28 June 1914. This caused a diplomatic crisis when Austria-Hungary issued an ultimatum to the Kingdom of Serbia, and entangled international alliances formed in previous decades were invoked. Within weeks, the great powers were at war and the conflict quickly spread around the world.

On 28 July, the Austro-Hungarians declared war on Serbia and then invaded Serbia. While Russia mobilized in support of Serbia, Germany invaded neutral Belgium and Luxembourg before heading to France, leading the United Kingdom to declare war on Germany. After the end of the German march on

Paris, what became known as the Western Front settled in a battle of attrition, with a trench line that would hardly change until 1917. Meanwhile, on the Eastern Front, the

The Russian army succeeded against the Austro-Hungarians but was arrested in its invasion of the East Prussian by the Germans. In November 1914, the Ottoman Empire joined the central powers, opening fronts in the Caucasus, Mesopotamia, and Sinai. Italy joined the Allies in 1915 and Bulgaria joined the central powers the same year, while Romania joined the Allies in 1916, followed by the United States in 1917.

The Russian government collapsed in March 1917, and a subsequent revolution in November led the Russians to reconcile with the central powers through the Brest Litovsk Treaty, which was a massive German victory. After an astonishing German offensive in the spring of 1918 along the Western Front, the Allies rallied and brought the Germans back into a series of successful offensives. On November 4, 1918, the Austro-Hungarian Empire agreed to an armistice, and Germany, which had its problems with the revolutionaries, agreed to an armistice on the 11th

November 1918, ending the war in victory for the Allies.

At the end of the war, the German Empire, Empire, the Austro-Hungarian Empire, and the Ottoman Empire had ceased to exist. National borders have been redrawn, with several independent nations restored or created, and German colonies have been distributed among the winners. At the 1919 Paris Peace Conference, the Big Four (Britain, France, the United States, and Italy) imposed their terms in a series of treaties. The League of Nations was created to prevent any recurrence of such a conflict. This failed however with the economic depression, the renewed European nationalism, the weakening of the Member States, and the feeling of German humiliation, which contributed to the rise of Nazism. These conditions contributed to the Second World War.

in 1775-in 1799

1775-83 - American War of Independence: an armed struggle for the secession of the British Empire by the Thirteen Colonies, which later became the United States.

1776-77 - Second Cherokee War: a series of armed conflicts when the Cherokee fought to prevent the encroachment of American settlers in eastern Tennessee and eastern Kentucky; under British rule; rule, this land had been preserved as indigenous territory.

1776-94 - Cherokee American Wars: A continuation of the Second Cherokee War that included more indigenous tribes trying to stop the expansion of settlers in Kentucky and Tennessee.

1785-95 - Northwest Indian War: A series of battles with various indigenous tribes in present-day Ohio. The objective of the campaign was to assert American sovereignty over the region and to create increased opportunities for colonization.

1786-87 - Shays Rebellion: a revolt by a debtor in western Massachusetts following a credit crunch that had devastated many farmers financially. The federal government was unable to raise an army to help state militias fight the uprising; the weakness of the national government has strengthened the case for replacing the statutes of Confederation with an updated government framework.

1791-94 - Whiskey Rebellion: a series of protests against the institution of a federal tax on the distillation of spirits as a source of income to repay the nation's war bonds. The revolt centered on southwestern Pennsylvania, although violence occurred throughout the trans-Canadian region.

1798-1800 - Quasi-War: an undeclared naval war with France over the American default on its war debt. Another mitigating factor was the

continued trade between the United States and Great Britain, with the French their former allies were at war. The competition included land actions, such as the

The Dominican city of Puerto Plata, where the U.S. Marines captured French ships under the cannons of the forts. Congress authorized military action through a series of laws.

1799-1800 - Fries' Rebellion: a series of protests against the adoption of new property taxes to be paid for the quasi-war period. Hostilities were concentrated in the Dutch communities of Pennsylvania.

1800-1809

1801-05 - First Barbary War: a series of naval battles in the Mediterranean against the Kingdom of Tripoli, a state almost independent of the Ottoman Empire. The action was in response to the capture of many American ships by the infamous barbarian pirates. The federal government rejected the Tripolitania request for an annual tribute to ensure safe passage, and a U.S. naval blockade ensued. After the capture of the USS Philadelphia, American forces under William Eaton invaded coastal cities. A peace treaty resulted in the payment of a ransom for the return of captured American soldiers and only temporarily eased hostilities.

1806 - Action in Spanish Mexico: Captain Zebulon Pike's platoon invades Spanish territory at the sources of the Rio Grande on the orders of General James Wilkinson. He was taken prisoner without resistance in a fort he built in present-day Colorado, taken to Mexico, and then released after his papers were seized.

1806-10 - Action in the Gulf of Mexico: American gunboats operated from New Orleans against The Spanish and French privately off the Mississippi Delta, under Captain John Shaw and Commander-in-Chief David Porter.

in 1810-in 1819

1810 - West Florida (Spanish territory:) Governor William C.C. Claiborne of Louisiana, on the orders of President James Madison, occupied with troops the disputed territory east of the Mississippi to the Pearl River, later the eastern border of Louisiana. It was allowed to seize as far east as the Perdido River.

Amelia Island and other parts of eastern Florida, then under Spain: temporary possession was authorized by President James Madison and Congress to prevent occupation by any other power; but possession was obtained by General George Mathews in such an irregular manner that his measures were disavowed by the President.

1812-15 - War of 1812: June 18, 1812,

The United States has declared war on the United Kingdom. Issues leading up to the war included the British impressment of American sailors in the Royal Navy, the interception of neutral ships, and the BLOCKADE of the United States during British hostilities with France.

West Florida (Spanish territory:) On the authority given by Congress, General Wilkinson seized Mobile Bay in April with 600 soldiers. A small Spanish garrison gave way. Thus, American troops advanced into disputed territory to the Perdido River, as planned in 1810. No fighting.

1813-14 - Marquesas Islands (French Polynesia:)

U.S. forces built a fort on Nuku Hiva Island to protect three prized ships that had been captured by the British.

Spanish Florida: General Andrew Jackson took Pensacola and drove out the British forces.

1814-25 - Caribbean: Engagements between pirates and U.S. ships or squadrons have occurred on several occasions, particularly on land and offshore Cuba, Puerto Rico, Santo Domingo, and Yucatan. Three thousand pirate attacks on merchants were reported between 1815 and 1823. In 1822 Commodore James Biddle employed a squadron of two frigates, four war sloops, two brigs,

four schooners, and two gunboats in the West Indies. 1815 - Algiers: The second barbaric war is declared against the United States by the Dey of Algiers of the barbarian states, a non-reciprocal act of the United States. Congress authorized a military expedition by law. A large fleet of Captain Stephen Decatur attacked Algiers and received compensation.

Tripoli: After obtaining an agreement from Algiers, Captain Decatur demonstrated with his squadron in Tunis and Tripoli, where he was awarded compensation for offenses during the War of 1812.

Spanish Florida: U.S. forces destroyed the Negro Fort, which housed fugitive slaves raiding U.S. territory.

1816 -18 - Spanish Florida - First Seminole War: The Seminoles Indians, whose area was a refuge for escaped slaves and border thugs, were attacked by troops under General Jackson and General Edmund P. Gaines and pursued in the north

Florida. Spanish posts were attacked and occupied; British citizens executed. In 1819, Florida's were ceded to the United States.

Amelia Island (Spanish territory off Florida:)

Under the command of President James Monroe, American forces disembarked and expelled a group of smugglers, adventurers, and freebooters. This episode of Florida history became known as the Amelia Island Business.

Oregon: The USS Ontario sent from Washington, D.C., to land at the mouth of the Columbia River to advance the claims of the United States. Britain had conceded sovereignty, but Russia and Spain had asserted claims in the region. Subsequently, the American and British claims to the land of Oregon were resolved with the Oregon Treaty of 1846.

In 1820-in 1829

1820-23 - Africa: Naval units plunder the slave trade following the 1819 Congress Act. 1822 - Cuba: U.S. naval forces crackdown, on piracy land on the northwest coast of Cuba and burned a pirate station.

Cuba: Brief landings in pursuit of pirates took place on 8 April near Escondido; 16 April near Cayo

Blanco; July 11 in Siquapa Bay; July 21 at Cape Cruz; October 23 in Camarioca.

Cuba: In October, the USS Porpoise landed sailors near Matanzas in pursuit of pirates. It was during the authorized cruise in 1822.

Puerto Rico (Spanish territory:) Commodore David Porter, during a landing, attacked the town of Fajardo, which had housed pirates and insulted U.S. naval officers. He landed with 200 men in November and forced an apology. Commodore Porter was later court-martialed for overstepping his powers.

Cuba: In March, U.S. and British forces landed at Sagua La Grande to capture pirates.

1827 - Greece:(2) In October and November, landing countries hunted pirates on the Mediterranean islands of Argentiére (Kimolos) Mykonos and Andros.

in 1830-in 1839

1831-32 - Falkland Islands: Captain Silas Duncan of the USS Lexington attacked, plundered, and burned the Argentine city of Puerto Soledad in the Falkland Islands. This was in response to the capture of three American sailboats who were arrested after ignoring orders to stop the depredation of local fishing resources without the permission of the Argentine government. Subsequently, the islands were invaded by the United Kingdom in 1833 remaining to this day.

Attack on Quallah Battoo: Sumatra, Indonesia - From February 6 to 9, U.S. forces of Commodore John Downes aboard the frigate USS Potomac landed and stormed a fort to punish the natives of the town of Quallah Battoo for looting the American cargo ship Friendship. Argentina: From 31 October to 15 November, a force was sent ashore in Buenos Aires to protect the interests of the United States and other countries during an insurgency.

1835-36 - Peru: from December 10, 1835, to January 24, 1836, and from August 31 to December 7, 1836, the Marines protected American interests at Callao and Lima during an attempt at revolution.

1835-42 - Florida Territory: The U.S. Navy supports the army's efforts to quell uprisings and attacks on civilians by the Seminoles Indians. The government's efforts to relocate the Seminoles west of the Mississippi were hampered by seven years of war.

1838The Caroline case on Navy Island, Canada:

After the failure of the 1837 Upper Canadian rebellion in Favour of Canadian democracy and the independence of the British Empire; William Lyon Mackenzie and his rebels fled to Navy Island where they declared the Republic of Canada.

American sympathizers sent supplies to SS Caroline, which was intercepted by the British and set on fire after killing an American. It has been falsely reported that dozens of Americans were killed while trapped on board, and U.S. forces retaliated by burning a British steamer while it was in U.S. waters.

1838-39 - Sumatra (Indonesia:) From 24 December 1838 to 4 January 1839, a naval force arrived to punish the natives of the cities of Quallah Battoo and Muckie (Mukki) for their depredations on American shipping.

In 1840-in 1849

Fiji Islands: In July, naval forces disembarked to punish natives who attacked U.S. parties for exploration and surveying. McKean Island (Drummond Island/Taputeneia,) Gilbert Islands (Kingsmill Group,) Pacific Ocean: A naval group has landed to avenge the murder of a sailor by the natives.

Samoa: On 24 February, a naval group landed and set fire to towns after the murder of an American sailor in Upolu.

Mexico: Commodore Thomas ap Catesby Jones, leading a squadron on a cruise

California, occupied Monterey, California, on October 19, believing that war had come. He discovered peace, withdrew, and bowed. A similar

incident occurred a week later in San Diego. China: Sailors and Marines from St. Louis were disembarked after a clash between the Americans and the Chinese at the Guangzhou trading post. From 29 November to 16 December, four American ships demonstrated and disembarked various parts (one of 200 marines and sailors) to deter piracy and the slave trade along with, Côte d'Ivoire, and to punish indigenous attacks on US seafarers and shipping. Mexico: President Tyler deployed U.S. forces to protect Texas from Mexico, pending Senate approval of an annexation treaty (which was later rejected.) He defended his action against a Senate inquiry resolution.

1846-48 - Mexican American War: On May 13, 1846, the United States recognized the existence of a state of war with Mexico. After the annexation of Texas in 1845, the United States and Mexico failed to resolve a border dispute, and President Polk said it was necessary to deploy forces to Mexico to deal with a threatened invasion.

The war ended with the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, signed on February 2, 1848. The treaty granted the United States undisputed control of Texas, established the border between the United States and Mexico from the Rio Grande, and ceded to the United States the present-day states of California, Nevada, Utah, and parts of Colorado, Arizona, New Mexico, and Wyoming. In return, Mexico received \$18,250,000 (\$499,000,000 in 2016), less than half the

amount the United States had attempted to offer Mexico for land before hostilities began.

1849 - Smyrna (Zamir, Turkey:) In July, a naval force secured the release of an American seized by Austrian officials.

In 1850-in 1859

1851 - Ottoman Empire: After a massacre of foreigners (including Americans) in Jaffa in January, a demonstration of the Mediterranean squadron is ordered along the Turkish coast (Levantine.)

1851 - Johanna Island (modern Anjouan, east of Africa:) In August, the forces of the American war sloop Dale demanded compensation for the illegal imprisonment of the captain of an American whaling ship.

1852-53 - Argentina: February 3-12, 1852; September 17, 1852, to April 1853: The Marines were disembarked and held in Buenos Aires to protect American interests during a revolution.

Nicaragua: From March 11 to 13, U.S. forces landed to protect American lives and interests during political unrest.

1853-54 - Japan: Commodore Matthew Perry and his expedition showed strength leading to the 'opening of Japan.'

1853-54 - Ryukyu and the Bonin Islands (Japan:) Commodore

Matthew Perry in three visits before going to Japan and waiting for a response from Japan made a naval demonstration, landed twice marines, and obtained a coal grant from the ruler of Naha in Okinawa; he also demonstrated in the Bonin Islands to secure the commercial facilities. China: From April 4 to June 17, British ships landed forces to protect American interests in and near Shanghai during the Chinese Civil War.

Nicaragua: From July 9 to 15, naval forces bombed and burned San Juan del Norte (Greytown) to avenge an insult to the U.S. minister in Nicaragua.

China: From May 19 to 21, U.S. forces protected U.S. interests in Shanghai and, from August 3 to 5, fought pirates near Hong Kong.

1855 - Fiji: From September 12 to November 4, a U.S. naval force disembarked to seek compensation for attacks on U.S. residents and sailors.

Uruguay: November 25-29, United States European states and naval forces landed to protect American interests during an attempted revolution in Montevideo.

Panama, Republic of New Granada: From September 19 to 22, U.S. forces landed to protect U.S. interests during an insurgency.

China: October 22 to December 6, American forces landed to protect American interests in Guangzhou during hostilities between the British and Chinese, and to avenge an assault on an unarmed ship displaying the U.S. flag.

1857-58 - Utah War: The Utah War is a dispute between Mormon settlers in the Utah Territory and the U.S. federal government. The Mormons and Washington each sought control over the territory's government, with the national government victorious. The clash between the Mormon militia and the U.S. military involved some destruction of property, but no real battle between the military forces in conflict.

Nicaragua: April to May, November to December. In May, Commander Charles Henry Davis of the U.S. Navy, along with a few Marines, received the surrender of William Walker, Nicaragua's self-proclaimed president, who lost control of the country on behalf of forces funded by his former business partner Cornelius Vanderbilt, and protected his men from reprisals from indigenous allies fighting Walker. In November and December of the same year United the American ships USS Saratoga, USS Wabash, and Fulton opposed another attempt by William Walker on Nicaragua. Commodore Hiram Paulding's act of disembarking the Marines and forcing Walker's return to the United States was tacitly disavowed by Secretary of State Lewis Cass, and Paulding was forced to retire.

Uruguay: From 2 to 27 January, the forces of two US warships disembarked to protect

U.S. property during a revolution in Montevideo.

Fiji Islands: From 6 to 16 October, a maritime expedition with the USS Vandalia killed 14 indigenous people and burned 115 huts in retaliation for the murder of two US citizens in Waya.

1858-59 - Ottoman Empire: The Secretary of State requested a demonstration of naval force along the Levant after a massacre of Americans in Jaffa and ill-treatment elsewhere 'to remind the authorities (of the Ottoman Empire) of the power of the United States. Paraguay: Congress authorized a naval squadron to seek compensation for an attack on a navy ship in the Parana River in 1855. An apology was made after a great show of force.

1859 - Mexico: Two hundred American soldiers cross the Rio Grande in pursuit of Mexican nationalist Juan Cortina.

China: From July 31 to August 2, a naval force landed to protect U.S. interests in Shanghai.

In 1860-in 1869

Angola, Portugal West Africa: march

1, U.S. residents at Kissebo used American and British ships to protect lives and property during problems with natives.

1860 - Colombia, Panama Bay: September from October 27 to 8, naval forces landed to protect American interests during a revolution.

1861-65 - Civil War: A major war between the United States (the Union) and eleven southern states that declared them entitled to secession and formed the Confederate States of America.

Japan: July 16, Shimonoseki Naval Battle:

THE USS Wyoming retaliated against a shot at the American ship Pembroke in Shimonoseki.

Japan: From July 14 to August 3, naval forces protected the U.S. minister in Japan when he traveled to Yedo to negotiate some U.S. claims against Japan and facilitate his negotiations by impressing the Japanese with American power.

Japan: From 4 to 14 September, the naval forces of the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Netherlands forced Japan and the Prince of Nagato to authorize the use of the Shimonoseki Strait by foreign shipping per the treaties already signed.

Panama: On March 9 and 10, U.S. forces protected the lives and property of U.S. residents during a revolution.

1865-77 - Southern United States

Post-Civil War Reconstruction: The South is divided into five union occupation districts under the Reconstruction Act.

Mexico: To protect U.S. residents, General Sedgwick and 100 men were granted the surrender of Matamoros in the border state of Tamaulipas in November. After three days, the U.S. government ordered him to step down. His act was repudiated by the President.

China: From June 20 to July 7, U.S. forces punished an assault on the U.S. consul in Newchwang. Nicaragua: The Marines occupied Managua and Leon.

Formosa, Taiwan: On June 13, a naval force disembarked and burned several huts to punish the killing of the crew of a destroyed American ship.

Japan (Osaka, Hiogo, Nagasaki, Yokohama and Negata:) February 4-8, April 4-May 12,

June 12-13. U.S. forces were landed to protect American interests during a civil war (Boshin War) in Japan.

1868 - Uruguay: On February 7 and 8 and 19-26, U.S. forces protected foreign residents and the customhouse during an uprising in Montevideo.

1868 - Colombia: In April, U.S. forces protect passengers and treasures in transit at Aspinwall in the absence of police or local troops on the death of the President of Colombia.

in 1870-in 1879

1870 - Battle of Boca Teacapan: On June 17 and 18, U.S. forces destroyed the pirate ship Forward, which had run aground about 40 miles from the Teacapan Estuary in Mexico.

1870 - Kingdom of Hawaii: On September 21, U.S. forces fly the American flag on the death of Queen Kalama, when the American consul in Honolulu will not take responsibility.

Korea: Shinmiyangyo - June 10-12, a U.S. naval force attacked and captured five forts to force the deadlock in trade agreement negotiations and punish the natives for their depredations on the Americans, for executing General Sherman's crew and burning the schooner (which happened because the crew had stolen food and abducted a Korean official) and for later shooting at other small American ships making sounds on the Salee River.

Colombia (Panama Bay:) May 7-22,

September 23 to October 9. U.S. forces protected U.S. interests during hostilities between local groups over control of the Panama state government.

1873-96- Mexico: U.S. troops cross the Mexican border several times in pursuit of cattle thieves and other robbers.

Honolulu Courthouse Riot: From February 12 to 20, detachments of American ships were disembarked to protect the interests of Americans living in the Kingdom of Hawaii at the coronation of a new king.

1876 - Mexico: On May 18, an American force was disembarked for police in the city of Matamoros, Mexico, temporarily, while it had no other government.

1878 - Lincoln County, New Mexico: July 15-19, at the Battle of Lincoln (1878) (part of the

Lincoln County War) 150 riders arrived from Fort Stanton, under the command of Lieutenant George Smith (later Colonel Nathan Dudley) to help the Murphy-Dolan faction attack the Lincoln County Regulators Self-Defense Group. Five dead, 8 to 28 wounded.

In 1880-in 1889

1882 - Egyptian Expedition: From July 14 to 18, U.S. forces landed to protect American interests during the British-Egyptian war and the Arab plundering of the city of Alexandria.

1885 - Panama (Colon:) On January 18 and 19, U.S. forces were used to keep valuables in transit on the Panama Railway, and the company's safes and vaults during the revolutionary activity. In March, April, and May in the cities of Colon and Panama, the forces helped restore freedom of transit during the revolutionary activity (see Columbus.)

1888 - Korea: In June, A naval force was sent ashore to protect American residents in Seoul under unstable political conditions, when a public demonstration was expected.

Haiti: On December 20, a show of force convinced the Haitian government to abandon an American steamboat that had been seized for violating the blockade.

1888-89 - Samoan crisis; First Samoan Civil War; Second Samoan Civil War: November 14, 1888, to On March 20, 1889, U.S. forces landed to protect American citizens and the consulate during an indigenous civil war.

Kingdom of Hawaii: On July 30 and 31, U.S. forces in Honolulu protected the interests of Americans living in Hawaii during a U.S.-led revolution.

In 1890-in 1899

1890 - Argentina: A naval group arrives to protect the U.S. Consulate and the legation in Buenos Aires.

South Dakota: On December 29, soldiers from the 7th U.S. Army Corps killed 178 Sioux Indians following an incident during a disarmament inspection at a Lakota Sioux encampment near Wounded Knee Creek. 89 other Amerinds were injured, 150 were reported missing; The army killed 25 people and wounded 39.

Haiti: U.S. forces have sought to protect American lives and property on the island of Navassa.

1891 - Anti-poaching operations in the Bering Sea: From July 2 to October 5, naval forces sought to stop seal poaching.

1891 - Itata Incident: the U.S. and European naval forces intercept and detain a shipment of weapons sent to congressional forces during the Chilean Civil War.

Chile: From 28 to 30 August, US forces protected the U.S. consulate and the women and children who had taken refuge there during a revolution in Valparaiso.

Homestead Strike: On July 6, striking miners attack Pinkerton National Detective Agency officers who try to break the strike by bringing unified workers to the mine. 6,000 Pennsylvania militia sent to restore public order. 16 dead, 27 to 47 injured.

Wyoming: From April 11 to April 13, the American cavalry was sent to break a gun battle at RANCH TA (Tuition Assistance).

Johnson County War

- Overthrow of the Hawaiian kingdom: From January 16 to April 1, the Marines landed in Hawaii, to protect American lives and property, but many believed they were promoting a provisional government under Sanford B. Dole. This action was disavowed by President Cleveland, and the United States apologized in 1993.

Nicaragua: From July 6 to August 7, U.S. forces sought to protect U.S. interests at Bluefield following a revolution.

1894-95 - China: Marines are stationed in Tianjin and enter Beijing for protection during the First Sino-Japanese War.

1894-95 - China: A warship was grounded and used as a fort in Newchwang for the protection of American nationals.

1894-96 - Korea: From July 24, 1894, to April 3, 1896, a marine guard was sent to protect American legation and American life and interests in Seoul during and after the Sino-Japanese War.

Colombia: On March 8 and 9, U.S. forces protected U.S. interests in an attack on the town of Bocas del Toro by a bandit leader. 1896 - Nicaragua: From May 2 to 4, U.S. forces protected U.S. interests in Corinto during political unrest.

1898 - Nicaragua: On February 7 and 8, U.S. forces protected American life and property in San Juan del Sur.

Spanish-American War: On April 25, 1898, the United States declared war on Spain, aligned with Cuban rebels. The war followed a Cuban insurgency, the Cuban war of independence against Spanish rule, and the sinking of the USS Maine in the port of Havana.

1898-99 - Samoa: Second Samoan Civil War, a conflict that reached its security system in 1898 when Germany, the United Kingdom, and the United States conflicted who should have control of the Samoan island chain.

1898-99 - China: From November 5, 1898, to March 15, 1899, American forces provided a guard for legation in Beijing and the consulate in Tianjin during the contest between the beloved Empress and her son.

Nicaragua: U.S. and British naval forces disembarked to protect national interests San Juan del Norte, from February 22 to March 5, and at Bluefields a few weeks later as part of The Uprising of General Juan P. Reyes.

1899-1913 - Philippines: Philippines- American War, U.S. forces protected American interests after the war with Spain, defeating Filipino revolutionaries seeking immediate national independence.

The U.S. government declared the 'insurrection' officially over in 1902 when Philippine leaders accepted American rule. Skirmishes between government troops and armed groups lasted until 1913, and some historians consider these unofficial extensions of the war.

In 1900-in 1909

China: May 24 to September 28, Boxer Rebellion. U.S. troops participated in operations to protect foreign lives during the boxing uprising, particularly in Beijing. For many years after this experience, a permanent legation guard was maintained in Beijing and was reinforced at times as a threatening disorder.

Colombia (Panama State:) From

November 20 to December 4. (See: Separation Panama of Colombia)

U.S. forces protected U.S. property on the Isthmus and kept transit lines open during the severe revolutionary unrest.

Colombia: From April 16 to 23, U.S. forces protected American lives and property in Bocas del Toro during a civil war.

From 17 September to 18 November, the United States placed armed guards on all trains crossing the Isthmus to keep the railway line open and parked ships on both sides of Panama to prevent the landing of Colombian troops.

Honduras: From March 23 to 30 or 31, U.S. forces protected the U.S. Consulate and the steamship dock in Puerto Cortes during a period of revolutionary activity.

1903 - Dominican Republic: From March 30 to April 21, a detachment of marines was disembarked to protect American interests in the city of Santo Domingo during a revolutionary epidemic.

Syria: From September 7 to 12, U.S. forces protected the U.S. consulate in Beirut when a local Muslim uprising was feared.

1903-04 - Abyssinia (Ethiopia:) Twenty-five Marines were sent to Abyssinia to protect the U.S. Consul General while he negotiated a treaty. 1903-14 - Panama: U.S. forces sought to protect American interests and lives during and after Colombia's independence revolution over the construction of the Isthmian Canal. With brief intermissions, the United States Marines were stationed on the Isthmus from November 4, 1903, to January 21, 1914, to protect American interests.

Dominican Republic: From January 2 to February 11, U.S. and British naval forces established an area in which no combat would be allowed and would not protect U.S. interests in Puerto Plata and Sosua, and Santo Domingo during the revolutionary fighting.

1904 - Tangier, Morocco: 'We want either living perdicaris or Raisuli dead.' A squadron demonstrated to force the release of a kidnapped American. Marines have been disembarked to protect the consul general.

1904 - Panama: From November 17 to 24, U.S. forces protected American lives and property in Ancon during a threatened insurgency.

1904-05 - Korea: From January 5, 1904, to November 11, 1905, a Marine guard was sent to protect the American legation in Seoul during the Russo-Japanese War.

1906-09 - Cuba: From September 1906 to January 23, 1909, U.S. forces sought to protect interests and restore a government after revolutionary activity.

1907 - Honduras: From March 18 to June 8, to protect American interests in a war between

Honduras and Nicaragua, troops were stationed Trujillo, Ceiba, Puerto Cortés, San Pedro Sula, Laguna et Choloma.

In 1910-in 1919

Nicaragua: May 19 to September 4, Occupation of Nicaragua. U.S. forces were protecting American interests at Bluefield's.

Honduras: On January 26, U.S. naval detachments were disembarked to protect American lives and interests during a civil war in Honduras.

China: Like Xinhai led by Tongmenghui

Revolution approached a sign in October and 10 men tried to enter Wuchang to rescue missionaries but withdrew after being warned, and a small landing force kept the Private American property and consulate in Hankow. Marines were deployed in November to guard the Shanghai cable stations; landing forces were sent for protection to Nanjing, Chinkiang, Taku, and elsewhere.

Honduras: A small force has landed to prevent the government from seizing an American railway in Puerto Cortes. The forces were withdrawn after the United States disapproved of the action.

1912 - Panama: Troops, at the request of both political parties, oversee elections outside the Panama Canal area.

1912 - Cuba: From June 5 to August 5, U.S. forces protected U.S. interests in Oriente Province and Havana.

1912 - China: August 24-26, Kentucky Island, and August 26-30 at Camp Nicholson. U.S. forces protected American and American interests during the Xinhai Revolution.

Turkey: From November 18 to December 3, American forces kept the American legation in Constantinople during the First Balkan War.

1912-25 Nicaragua: From August to November 1912, U.S. forces protected American interests in an attempted revolution. A small force, serving as a guard of the legation and seeking to promote peace and stability, remained until 5 August 1925. 1912-41 - China: The unrest that began with the overthrow of the dynasty during the Kuomintang Rebellion in 1912, which was redirected by Japan's invasion of China, led to demonstrations and landing parties to always protect American interests in China and at many times from 1912 to

1941. The guard in Beijing and along the road to the sea was maintained until 1941. In 1927, the United States had 5,670 soldiers ashore in China and 44 ships in its waters. In 1933, the United States had 3,027 armed men on the ground. The protection action was based on treaties with China from 1858 to 1901.

Mexico: From September 5 to 7, a few Marines landed in Ciaris Estero to help evacuate U.S. citizens and others from the Yaqui Valley, made dangerous to foreigners by civil unrest.

Haiti: January 29 to February 9, February 20 and 21, October 19. Intermittently, U.S. naval forces protected U.S. nationals during a time of riots and revolutions. The specific order of the

Secretary of the Navy to the Commander of the Invasion, Admiral William Deville Bundy, was to 'protect the U.S. and foreign interests.

1914 - Dominican Republic: In June and July, during a revolutionary movement, the U.S. naval forces shot a hundred at the bombardment of Puerto Plata and, by the threat of force, kept the city of Santo Domingo in a neutral zone.

1914-17 - Mexico: The Tampico Affair

Occupation of Veracruz, Mexico. Declared Mexican hostilities—U.S. hostilities followed the Tampico case and Villa raids. Also, Pancho Villa

Expedition) - an aborted military operation conducted by the U.S. Army against the military forces of Francisco 'Pancho' Villa de

1916 to 1917 and included the capture of Veracruz. On March 19, 1915, on the orders of President Woodrow Wilson, and with tacit consent by Venustiano Carranza General John J. Pershing led an invading force of 10,000 men (about the seating capacity of Cameron basketball stadium at Duke University) to Mexico to capture Villa.

1915-34 - Haiti: July 28, 1915, to August 15, 1934, U.S. occupation of Haiti. U.S. forces-maintained order during a period of chronic political instability. Upon initial entry into Haiti, the specific order of the Secretary of the navy of the invasion commander, Admiral William Deville Bundy, was to 'protect American and foreign interests.'

China: U.S. forces have landed to quell a riot on a U.S. property in Nanjing.

1916-24 - Dominican Republic: From May 1916 to September 1924, Occupation of the Dominican Republic. U.S. naval forces-maintained order during a period of chronic and threatened insurgency.

China: U.S. troops were landed in Chongqing to protect the lives of Americans during a political crisis.

1917-18 - First World War: On April 6, 1917, The United States declared war on Germany and, on December 7, 1917, on Austria-Hungary. The entry of the United States into the war was precipitated by Germany's submarine war against neutral shipping and the Telegram Zimmermann.

1917-22 - Cuba: U.S. forces protected U.S. interests during the insurgency and subsequent unresolved conditions. Most U.S. armed forces left Cuba in August 1919, but two companies remained in Camaguey until February 1922.

1918-19 - Mexico: After the withdrawal of the Pershing expedition, American troops entered Mexico in pursuit of bandits at least three times in 1918 and six times in 1919. In August 1918,

Mexican troops fought at Nogales, Battle of Ambos Nogales. The incident began when German spies plotted an attack with Mexican soldiers on Nogales Arizona. The fighting began when a Mexican officer shot and killed an American soldier on American soil. A large-scale battle ensued, ending with a Mexican surrender.

1918-20 - Panama: U.S. forces were used for the police service following treaty provisions in Chiriqui during election disturbances and subsequent unrest.

1918-20 - Russian SFSR: Marines were landed in Vladivostok and near Vladivostok in June and July to protect the U.S. Consulate and other points in fighting between Bolshevik troops and the Czech army that had crossed Siberia from the Western Front. A joint proclamation of the emergency government and neutrality was issued by the commanders of the United States, Japan, The United Kingdom, France, and the Czech Republic in July. In August, 7,000 men landed in Vladivostok and remained until January 1920 as part of an Allied occupying force. In September 1918, 5,000 American soldiers joined the Allied Intervention Force at Archangel and remained until June 1919. These operations were in response to the Bolshevik revolution in Russia and were partly supported by tsarist or Kerensky elements. For more details, see the U.S. Expeditionary Force

Siberia and the American Expeditionary Force North Russia.

1919 - Dalmatia (Croatia:) American forces landed in Trau at the request of the Italian authorities to command the police between the Italians and the Serbs.

1919 - Turkey: Marines from the USS Arizona disembark to guard the U.S. Consulate during the Greek occupation of Constantinople.

Honduras: From 8 to 12 September, a landing force was sent ashore to maintain order in a neutral zone during an attempt at revolution.

In 1920-in 1929

China: On 14 March, a landing force was sent ashore for a few hours to protect lives during a disturbance in Kiukiang.

Guatemala: From April 9 to 27, U.S. forces protected U.S. legation and other U.S. interests, such as the cable station, during a period of fighting between the Unionists and the Guatemalan government.

1920-22 - Russia (Siberia:.) From February 16, 1920, to November 19, 1922, a Marine guard was sent to protect the U.S. radio station and property on the Russian island of Vladivostok.

Panama and Costa Rica: U.S. naval squadrons demonstrated in April on both sides of Isthmus to prevent war between the two countries following a border dispute.

Turkey: In September and October, a landing force was sent ashore with the consent of the Greek and Turkish authorities, to protect American lives and property when Turkish nationalists entered Zamir (Smyrna.)

1922-23 - China: From April 1922 to November 1923, the Marines were landed five times to protect the Americans during periods of unrest.

1924 - Honduras: From February 28 to March 31, and from September 10 to 15, U.S. forces protected American lives and interests during election hostilities.

China: In September, Marines were disembarked to protect Americans and other foreigners in Shanghai during hostilities between Chinese factions.

China: From January 15 to August 29, fighting by Chinese factions accompanied by riots and demonstrations in Shanghai led to the landing of U.S. forces to protect lives and property in the international colony.

1925 - Honduras: From April 19 to 21, U.S. forces protected foreigners in La Ceiba during a political upheaval.

Panama: From October 12 to 23, strikes and rent riots led to the landing of about 600 U.S. troops to maintain order and protect American interests.

1926-33 - Nicaragua: From May 7 to June 5, 1926, and from August 27, 1926, to January 3, 1933, General Chamorro's coup d'état sparked revolutionary activities leading to the landing of the U.S. marines to protect U.S. interests. U.S. forces came and went intermittently until January 3, 1933.

China: In August and September, the nationalist attack on Hankow resulted in the landing of U.S. naval forces to protect U.S. citizens. A small guard was held at the Consulate General even after 16 September, when the other forces were withdrawn. Similarly, when nationalist forces captured Kiukiang, naval forces were disembarked for the protection of foreigners from 4 to 6 November.

China: In February, fighting in Shanghai led to an increase in the presence of U.S. naval forces and navies. In March, a naval guard was stationed at the U.S. Consulate in Nanjing after nationalist forces seized the city. The American and British destroyers later used shell fire to protect Americans and other foreigners. Subsequently, additional forces of marines and naval forces were stationed in the vicinity of Shanghai and heads in.

In 1930-in 1939

1932 - China: U.S. forces are landed to protect U.S. interests during the Japanese occupation of Shanghai.

United States: 'Bonus Army' of 17,000 First World War veterans plus 20,000 family members Washington, then Anacostia apartments 'Hooverville' by 3rd Cavalry and 12th Infantry Regiments under General Douglas MacArthur, July 28.

Cuba: During a revolution against President Gerardo Machado, naval forces demonstrated, but no landings were made.

China: Marines land at Fuzhou to protect the U.S. Consulate.

In 1940-in 1944

Newfoundland and Labrador, Bermuda, St. Lucia - Bahamas, Jamaica, Antigua, Trinidad, and Guyana: Troops were sent to guard air and naval bases obtained under lease through negotiation with the United Kingdom. These were sometimes called leasing bases but were under the agreement destroyers for bases.

Greenland: Greenland was taken under the protection of the United States in April.

1941 - Netherlands (Dutch Guiana:) In November, the President ordered American troops to occupy Dutch Guiana, but by mutual agreement with the Dutch government in exile, Brazil cooperated to protect the supply of aluminum ore from the bauxite mines in Suriname.

1941 - Iceland: Iceland is taken under the protection of the United States, with the consent of its government replacing British troops, for strategic reasons.

1941 - Germany: In the spring, the

The president ordered the Navy to patrol the shipping lanes to Europe. In July, U.S. warships were in convoy and in September were attacking German submarines. In November, in response to the sinking of the USS Reuben James on October 31, 1941, the Neutrality Act was partially repealed to protect U.S. military aid to Britain.

1941-45 - World War II: On December 7, 1941, the United States declared war on Japan in response to the bombing of Pearl Harbor. On December 11, Germany declared war on the United States.

In 1945-in 1949

1945 - China: In October, 50,000 U.S. Marines were sent to northern China to help Chinese nationalist authorities disarm and repatriate the Japanese to China and control ports, railways, and airfields. This was in addition to the approximately 60,000 U.S. forces that remained in China at the end of World War II.

1945-49 - Occupation of part of Germany.

1945-55 - Occupation of part of Austria.

1945-52 - Occupation of Japan.

1944-46 - Temporary reoccupation of the Philippines during World War II and in preparation for previously planned independence.

1945-47 - U.S. Marines garrisoned on mainland China to oversee the withdrawal of Soviet and Japanese forces after World War II. 1945-49 - Occupation of the South after the Second World War Korea; North Korean insurgency in the Republic of Korea.

1946 - Trieste, Italy: President Truman orders the increase of U.S. troops along the zonal occupation line and the strengthening of air forces in northern Italy after Yugoslav forces shot down an unarmed U.S. Army transport plane flying over Venezia Giulia. (Quote needed) Previous U.S. naval units had been sent to the scene. Later, the free territory of Trieste, Zone A.

1948 - Jerusalem (British warrant:) A maritime consular guard is sent to Jerusalem to protect the Consul General of the United States.

1948 - Berlin: Berlin Air Transport After the Soviet Union established a land blockade of the American, British, and French areas of Berlin on 24 June 1948, The United States, and its allies' airlifted supplies to Berlin until the lifting of the blockade in May 1949.

1948-49 - China: Marines are sent to Nanjing to protect the U.S. Embassy when the city falls to the aid of Communist troops, and to Shanghai to help protect and evacuate Americans.

In 1950-in 1959

Map of military operations since 1950 1950-53 - Korean War: The United States reacted to the North Korean invasion of South Korea by going to its aid, following United Nations Security Council resolutions. U.S. forces deployed in Korea exceeded 300,000 in the last year of the active conflict (1953.) More than 36,600 U.S. service members were killed in action.

1950-55 - Formosa (Taiwan:) In June 1950, at the start of the Korean War, President Truman ordered the U.S. Seventh Fleet to prevent

Communist attacks on Formosa and Chinese nationalist operations against mainland China.

1954-55 - China: Naval units evacuated U.S. civilians and military personnel from the Tachen Islands.

1955-64 - Vietnam: First military advisors sent to Vietnam on February 12, 1955. By 1964, the number of U.S. troops had risen to 21,000. On August 7, 1964, the U.S. Congress approved the Gulf of Tonkin resolution stating that 'all necessary measures to repel any armed attack on U.S. forces - to prevent further aggression ... (And) help any member or protocol state of the Southeast Asian Collective Defence Treaty (SEATO) to ask for help . . .

(Vietnam Timeline)

1956 - Egypt: A maritime battalion evacuated American nationals and others from Alexandria during the Suez crisis.

1958 - Lebanon: Lebanon crisis in 1958, the Marines landed in Lebanon at the invitation of President Camille Chamoun to help protect themselves against threats of sustained external insurgency. The President's action was supported by a congressional resolution passed in 1957 authorizing such actions in this part of the world. 1959-60 - The Second Caribbean MarineLand Task Force was deployed to protect U.S. nationals after the Cuban Revolution.

1959-75 - Vietnam War: U.S. military advisers had been in South Vietnam for a decade, and their numbers had increased as Ho Chi Minh City government's military position weakened. After buying what he wrongly called were attacks against

American Destroyers, in what came to be known as the Gulf of Tonkin incident, President Johnson asked in August 1964 for a resolution expressing the United States' determination to support 'freedom and protect peace in Southeast Asia.' Congress responded with the Gulf of Tonkin resolution, giving President Johnson authorization, without an official declaration of war by Congress, for the use of conventional military force in Southeast Asia. Following this resolution and following a communist attack on

an American facility in central Vietnam, the United States intensified its participation in the war at a peak of 543,000 military personnel in April 1969.

1960-1969

Cuba: The Bay of Pigs Invasion, known in Hispanic America under the name Of Bahá'ade Cochinos (or Invasion de Playa Giron or Batalla de Giron) was an unsuccessful military invasion of Cuba by the CIA-sponsored paramilitary group Brigade 2506 in on April 17, 1961.

Thailand: The third marine expeditionary unit landed on 17 May 1962 to support Thailand under threat of external communist pressure; By 30 July, the 5,000 marines had been withdrawn.

1962 Cuba: Cuban Missile Crisis, On October 22, President Kennedy instituted a 'quarantine' on the shipment of offensive missiles to Cuba from the Soviet Union. He also warned the Soviet Union that the launch of any missile from Cuba against nations in the Western Hemisphere would provoke the United States.

Nuclear retaliation against the Soviet Union. A negotiated settlement was reached within a few days.

1962-75 - Laos: From October 1962 to 1975, the United States played a key role in the military support of anti-communist forces in Laos.

Congo (the Democratic Republic of the Congo:) The United States has sent four transport planes to provide airlift for Congolese troops during a rebellion and to transport Belgian paratroopers to rescue foreigners.

Invasion of the Dominican Republic: Operation Power Pack, the United States intervened to protect lives and property during a Dominican revolt and sent 20,000 American troops amid growing fears that revolutionary forces were increasingly under Communist control. A popular rebellion broke out, promising to resettle Juan Bosch as head of the country. The revolution was crushed when the U.S. Marines landed to support the military regime by force. The CIA runs everything behind the scenes.

1967 - Israel: The INCIDENT of the USS Liberty, in which a US Navy technical research vessel was attacked on 8 June 1967 by the Israeli armed forces, killing 34 people and injuring more than 170 American crew members.

Congo (the Democratic Republic of the Congo:) The United States has sent three military transport planes with crews to provide logistical support to the central government of Congo during a revolt.

Laos and Cambodia: The United States begins a covert bombing campaign against targets along the Ho chi Minh trail in the sovereign nations of Cambodia and Laos. The bombing lasted at least two years.

(See Operation Commando Hunt)

1970-1979

1970 - Cambodian campaign: U.S. troops were ordered to enter Cambodia to clean up communist shrines from which Viet Cong and North Vietnamese attacked U.S. and South Vietnamese forces in Vietnam. The aim of the attack, which lasted from April 30 to June 30, was to ensure the safe withdrawal of U.S. forces.

South Vietnam and to assist the Vietnamization program.

North Vietnam: Christmas bombing Operation Linebacker II (not mentioned in RL30172, but an operation leading to peace negotiations.) The operation took place from December 18 to December 29, 1972. It was a bombing of the cities of Hanoi and Haiphong by B-52 bombers.

Operation Nickel Grass, a strategic U.S.-led airlift operation to deliver arms and supplies to Israel during the Yom Kippur War.

Evacuation of Cyprus: U.S. naval forces evacuated U.S. civilians during the Turkish invasion of Cyprus.

Evacuation of Vietnam: Operation Frequent Wind, On April 3, 1975, President Ford reported that U.S. Navy ships, helicopters, and Marines had been sent to assist in the evacuation of refugees and U.S. nationals from Vietnam.

1975 - Evacuation from Cambodia: Operation Eagle Pull, On April 12, 1975, President Ford indicated that he had ordered the U.S. military to proceed with the planned evacuation of U.S. citizens from Cambodia.

1975 - South Vietnam: On April 30, 1975, President Ford reported that a force of 70 evacuation helicopters and 865 Marines had evacuated about 1,400 U.S. citizens and 5,500 third-country and South Vietnamese nationals from the landing.

in and around the U.S. Embassy, Ho Chi Minh City and tan it is nhut airport.

Cambodia: Incident Mayaguez, on 15 May 1975, President Ford indicated that he had ordered the military forces to retake the SS Mayaguez, a merchant ship that was seized by Cambodian naval patrol boats in international waters and forced to travel to a nearby island.

Lebanon: On 22 and 23 July 1976, helicopters from five US Navy ships evacuated about 250 Americans and Europeans from Lebanon during fighting between Lebanese factions after a ground convoy evacuation was blocked by hostilities.

1976 - Korea: Additional forces were sent to Korea after two U.S. soldiers were killed by North Korean soldiers in the demilitarized zone between North and South Korea while cutting down a tree.

1978 - Zaïre (Congo:) From 19 May to 1 June, the United States used military transport aircraft to provide logistical support to The Belgian and French rescue operations in Zaïre.

1980-1989

1980 - Iran: Operation Eagle Claw, on April 26, 1980, President Carter reported the use of six United States.

Transport planes and eight helicopters in an unsuccessful attempt to rescue American hostages in Iran.

U.S. Army and Air Force units arrived in Sinai in September as part of 'Operation Bright Star.' They are there to train with the Egyptian armed forces as part of the Camp David peace accords signed in 1979. Elements of the 101st Airborne

The Division (1st Battalion, 502nd Infantry) and Military Airlift Command (MAC) units are in service for four months and are the first U.S. military forces in the region since World War II.

El Salvador: After a guerrilla offensive against the Salvadoran government, other U.S. military advisors were sent to El Salvador, bringing the total to about 55, to help train government forces in counterinsurgency.

Libya: First incident in the Gulf of Sidra, on August 19, 1981, U.S. aircraft based on the carrier USS Nimitz shot down two Libyan planes over the Gulf of Sidra after one of the Libyan planes fired a heat-hunting missile. The United States has periodically conducted freedom of navigation exercises in the Gulf of Sidra, claimed by Libya as territorial waters but considered international waters by the United States.

Sinai: On March 19, 1982, President Reagan reported the deployment of military personnel and equipment to participate in the Multinational Force and observers in Sinai. Participation had been authorized by the Multinational Forces and Observers Resolution, Public Law 97-132.

Lebanon: Multinational force in Lebanon, on August 21, 1982, President Reagan reported the dispatch of 800 Marines to serve in the multinational force to assist in the withdrawal of members of the Palestine Liberation force from Beirut. The Marines left on September 20, 1982.

1982-83 - Lebanon: September 29, 1982,

President Reagan reported the deployment of 1,200 marines to serve in a temporary multinational force to facilitate the restoration of Lebanese government sovereignty. On September 29, 1983, Congress passed the Resolution of the Multinational Force in Lebanon (P.L. 98-119) authorizing the continuation of participation for eighteen months.

Egypt: After a Libyan plane bombed a city in Sudan on March 18, 1983, and Sudan and Egypt appealed for help, the United States sent an AWACS electronic surveillance aircraft to Egypt.

1983 - Grenada: Operation Emergency Fury, citing the increased threat of Soviet and Cuban influence and noting the development of an international airport following a coup and alignment with the Soviet Union and Cuba, the United States invaded the island nation with grenades.

1983-89 Honduras: In July 1983, the United States began a series of exercises in Honduras that some believe could lead to conflicts with Nicaragua. On March 25, 1986, unarmed U.S. military helicopters and crew carried Honduran troops to the Nicaraguan border to repel Nicaraguan troops.

Chad: On 8 August 1983, President Reagan reported the deployment of two AWACS electronic surveillance aircraft and eight F-15 fighter jets and

ground coordination support forces to assist Chad against Libyan and rebel forces.

- Persian Gulf: On June 5, 1984, Saudi fighter jets, aided by the intelligence of a U.S. AWACS electronic surveillance aircraft powered by a U.S. tanker KC-10, shot down two Iranian fighter jets over an area of the Persian Gulf declared a protected area for shipping.

Italy: On October 10, 1985, U.S. Navy pilots intercepted an Egyptian airliner and forced it to land in Sicily. The airliner was carrying hijackers from the Italian cruise ship Achille Lauro, which killed a U.S. citizen during the hijacking.

Libya: Action in the Gulf of Sidra (1986, On March 26, 1986, President Reagan reported that on March 24 and 25, U.S. forces, while engaged in freedom of navigation exercises around the Gulf of Sidra, had been attacked by Libyan missiles and that the United States had retaliated with missiles.

1986 - Libya: Operation El Dorado Canyon, on April 16, 1986, President Reagan reported that U.S. air and naval forces had carried out bombing raids on terrorist and military installations

Libyan capital of Tripoli, claiming that the Libyan leader Colonel Muammar Gaddafi was responsible for a bomb attack on a German nightclub that killed two American soldiers.

Bolivia: U.S. military personnel and aircraft assisted Bolivia in anti-drug operations.

- Persian Gulf: The USS Stark was struck on May 17 by two, except for airship missiles fired from a Dassault Mirage F1 of the Iraqi Air Force during the Iran-Iraq war, killing 37 US Navy sailors.

1987 - Persian Gulf: Operation Agile Archer. Attacks on two Iranian oil rigs in the Persian Gulf by U.S. Navy forces on October 19.

The attack was a response to Iran's October 16, 1987, attack on the MV Sea Isle City, a Kuwaiti tanker anchored off Kuwait, with a Silkworm missile.

1987-88 - Persian Gulf: Operation Earnest Will. After the Iran-Iraq War (oil war phase) which resulted in several military incidents in the Persian Gulf, the United States intensified the joint operations of U.S. military forces in the Persian Gulf and adopted a policy of reframing and escorting Kuwaiti tankers across the Persian Gulf to protect them from Iraqi and Iranian attacks. President Reagan said U.S. ships were fired at mines, hit, or took other military

action 21 September (Iran Ajr), 8 October and October July 19, 1987, and April 18 (Operation Religious Mante), July 3 and July 14, 1988. The United States gradually reduced its forces after a ceasefire between Iran and Iraq on August 20, 1988. It was the largest naval convoy operation since World War II.

1987-88 - Persian Gulf: Operation Prime Chance was an operation of the U.S. Special Operations Command to protect U.S.-flagged tankers from Iranian attacks during the Iran-Iraq war. The operation took place at about the same time as Operation Earnest Will.

1988 - Persian Gulf: Operation Praying Mantis is the 18 April 1988 action by U.S. naval forces in retaliation for The Iranian Mining of the Persian Gulf and subsequent damage to an American warship.

1988 - Honduras: Operation Golden Pheasant is an emergency deployment of U.S. troops to Honduras in 1988, following threatening actions by Nicaraguan (then socialist) forces in 1988 - USS Vincennes shot down Iran Air Flight 655.

Panama: In mid-March and April 1988, during a period of instability in Panama and as the United States increased pressure on Panama's head of state, General Manuel Noriega, to resign, the United States sent 1,000 troops to Panama to 'further protect the canal, life, property and interests of the United

States in the region.' The completed forces 10,000 U.S. military personnel already in the Panama Canal area.

Libya: Second incident in the Gulf of Sidra. On January 4, 1989, two U.S. Navy F-14s based on the USS John F. Kennedy shot down two Libyan jet fighters over the Mediterranean Sea about 70 miles north of Libya. U.S. pilots said The Libyan planes had shown hostile intentions.

1989 - Panama: On May 11, 1989, in response to General Noriega ignoring the results of the Panamanian election, President Bush ordered a force the size of a brigade of about 1,900 soldiers to increase the approximately 1,000 U.S. forces already in the region.

1989 - Colombia, Bolivia, and Peru: Andean War on Drugs Initiative, On September 15, 1989, President Bush announced that military and police aid would be sent to help the Andean countries of Colombia, Bolivia, and Peru combat illicit drug producers and traffickers. As of mid-September, there were 50 to 100 U.S. military advisers in Colombia in the transportation and training of military equipment, as well as seven special forces teams of 2 to 12 personnel to train troops in the three countries.

1989 - Philippines: Operation Classic Resolve, On December 2, 1989, President Bush reported that on December 1, Air Force fighters at Clark Air

Force Base in Luzon had helped the Aquino government repel an attempted coup. In addition, 100 marines were sent from the U.S. naval base to protect the U.S. Embassy in Manila.

1989-90 - Panama: invasion by the United States Panama and Operation Just Cause, On December 21, 1989, President Bush indicated that he had ordered U.S. military forces in Panama to protect the lives of U.S. citizens and bring General Noriega to justice. By 13 February 1990, all invading forces had been withdrawn. About 200 Panamanian civilians were killed. Lla The Panamanian head of state, General Manuel

Noriega was captured and brought to the United States from 1990 to 1999.

1990 - Liberia: On 6 August 1990, President Bush reported that a reinforced rifle company had been sent to provide additional security at the U.S. Embassy in Monrovia, and that helicopter crews had evacuated U.S. citizens from Liberia.

Saudi Arabia: On 9 August 1990, President Bush said he launched Operation Desert Shield by ordering the advance deployment of substantial elements of the U.S. armed forces to the Persian Gulf region to help defend Saudi Arabia after Iraq invades Kuwait on August 2. On 16 November 1990, he

reported the continued build-up of forces to ensure an adequate military offensive option. American hostages detained in Iran. The transit point for the troops was the Bagram airfield.

Iraq and Kuwait: Gulf War, January 16, 1991, in response to Iraq's refusal to leave Kuwait, U.S. and coalition aircraft attacked Iraqi forces and military targets in Iraq and Kuwait in collaboration with a coalition of allies and United Nations Security Council resolutions. On 24 February 1991, United Nations-led United Nations (UNITED) forces launched a ground offensive that eventually drove Iraqi forces out of Kuwait in less than 100 hours (about 4 days). Combat operations ended on February 28, 1991, when President Bush declared a ceasefire.

1991-96 - Iraq: Operation Providing Comfort, delivery of humanitarian relief and military protection to Kurds fleeing their homes in northern Iraq during the 1991 uprising by a small Allied ground force based in Turkey that began in April 1991.

1991 - Iraq: On May 17, 1991, President Bush declared that the Iraqi repression of the Kurdish people had necessitated the limited introduction of U.S. forces into northern Iraq for emergency relief.

Zaire: From 25 to 27 September 1991, after widespread looting and riots broke out in Kinshasa, the C-141s (about 2 and a half minutes) of the air force transported 100 Belgian soldiers and equipment to Kinshasa. U.S. planes were also carrying 300 French troops to the Central African Republic and carrying evacuated U.S. citizens.

Sierra Leone: Operation Silver Anvil, Following the April 29 coup that toppled

President Joseph Saidu Momoh, United States European Command's Joint Special Operations Task Force (USEUCOM) evacuated 438 people (including 42 third-country nationals) on 3 May. Two C-141s (about 2 and a half minutes) from the Air Mobility Command (AMC) transported 136 people from Freetown, Sierra Leone, to Rhein-Main Air Base in Germany and nine C-130 sorties carried another 302 people to Dakar, Senegal.

1992-96 - Bosnia and Herzegovina: Operation Provide Promise was a humanitarian relief operation in Bosnia and Herzegovina the Yugoslav wars, from 2 July 1992 to 9 January 1996, made it the longest humanitarian airlift in history.

1992 - Kuwait: On August 3, 1992, the United States States began a series of military exercises in Kuwait, following Iraq's refusal to recognize a

new border established by the United Nations and the refusal to cooperate with UN inspection teams. 1992-2003 - Iraq: Iraqi no-fly zones, The United States, the United Kingdom, and its Gulf War allies have declared and implemented 'no-fly zones' over most of Iraq's sovereign airspace, banning Iraqi flights in areas of southern Iraq and northern Iraq, conducting aerial reconnaissance and several specific attacks on Iraqi air defense systems under the UN mandate. Often, Iraqi forces continued throughout a decade by firing on U.S. and British aircraft patrolling no-fly zones. (See also Operation

Northern Watch, Opération Southern Watch)

1992-95 - Somalia: Operation Restoring Hope, Somali Civil War: On 10 December 1992, President Bush indicated that he had deployed US armed forces to Somalia in response to a humanitarian crisis and a UN Security Council resolution in support of UNITAF. The operation ended on May 4, 1993. U.S. forces continued to participate in the United Nations operation in Somalia (UNOSOM II.) (See also Battle of Mogadishu)

1993-95 - Bosnia: Operation Deny Flight, April 12, 1993, in response to the adoption by the United Nations Security Council of Resolution 816, the United States and NATO applied the no-fly zone over Bosnian airspace, banned all unauthorized flights, and authorized to 'take all necessary measures to ensure compliance with no-fly zone restrictions.'

Macedonia: On 9 July 1993, President Clinton reported the deployment of 350 US troops to the Republic of Macedonia to participate in the UN Protection Force to help maintain stability in the former Yugoslavia region.

1994 - Bosnia: Incident of Banja Luka, NATO gets involved in the first combat situation when F-16 aircraft of the US-NATO Air Force shot down four of the six single-seat J-21 Jastreb light attack aircraft of the Bosnian Serbs for violation of the UN-mandated no-fly zone.

1994-95 - Haiti: Operation Defending Democracy, The American ships had begun the embargo against Haiti. To 20,000 U.S. troops were then deployed to Haiti to restore democratically elected President of Haiti Jean-Bertrand Aristide of a military regime that came to power in 1991 after a major coup.

Macedonia: On 19 April 1994, President Clinton said the U.S. contingent in Macedonia had been increased by a 200-strong company.

Bosnia: Operation Deliberate Force, On 30 August 1995, US and NATO aircraft launched a major bombing campaign by the Bosnian Serb Army in response to a Bosnian Serb mortar attack on a

Sarajevo market killed 37 people on August 28, 1995. This operation lasted until 20 September 1995. The air campaign and a combined allied ground

force of the Muslim and Croatian army against Serb positions led to a Dayton agreement in December 1995 with the signing of warring factions. As part of Operation Joint Endeavor, the United States and NATO implementation force (IFOR) peacekeepers in Bosnia to comply with the Dayton Agreement.

Liberia: Operation Assured Response, On 11 April 1996, President Clinton reported that on 9 April 1996, due to the 'deteriorating security situation and the resulting threat to U.S. citizens in Liberia, he ordered U.S. military forces to evacuate 'private U.S. citizens and certain third-country nationals who had fled to the United States.'

The embassy compound...

1996 - Central African Republic, Operation Rapid Response: On 23 May 1996, President Clinton reported the deployment of U.S. military personnel to Bangui, Central African Republic, to evacuate 'private U.S. citizens and certain U.S. government employees and to provide 'enhanced security to the U.S.

U.S. Embassy in Bangui. In response to neighboring Liberia, elements of the Joint Task Force Marine Corps responded to neighboring Liberia, secured the embassy, and evacuated 448 people, including between 190 and 208 Americans. The last Marines left Bangui on June 22.

1996 - Kuwait: Operation Desert Strike, US airstrikes in the north to protect the Kurdish population from attacks by the Iraqi army.

Bosnia: Operation Joint Guard, On 21 December 1996, the United States and NATO created FOR peacekeepers to replace IFOR in the application of peace under the Dayton Agreement.

Albania: Operation Silver Wake, On March 13, 1997, U.S. military forces were used to evacuate some U.S. government employees and private U.S. citizens from Tirana, Albania.

1997 - Congo and Gabon: On 27 March 1997, President Clinton reported on 25 March 1997 that a U.S. military rescue evacuation force had been deployed to Congo and Gabon to provide enhanced security and to be available for any necessary evacuation operations.

1997 - Sierra Leone: May 29 and May 30, 1997, U.S. military personnel have been deployed to Freetown, Sierra Leone, to prepare and begin the evacuation of some U.S. government employees and private U.S. citizens.

Cambodia: On July 11, 1997, to ensure the safety of U.S. citizens in Cambodia during a period of internal conflict, a task force of approximately 550 U.S. military personnel was deployed to Utapao Air Base in Thailand for possible evacuations.

Iraq: Operation Desert Fox, U.S. and British forces are conducting a major four-day bombing campaign on December 16, 1998, against Iraqi targets.

1998 - Guinea-Bissau: Operation Shepherd Venture, on June 10, 1998, in response to an army mutiny in Guinea-Bissau endangering the U.S. Embassy, President Clinton deployed a U.S. military relief evacuation force to Dakar, Senegal, to evacuate from the city of Bissau.

1998-99 - Kenya and Tanzania: U.S. military personnel were deployed to Nairobi, Kenya, to coordinate medical and disaster assistance related to the bombing of U.S. embassies in Kenya and Tanzania.

1998 - Afghanistan and Sudan: Operation Infinite Reach, On August 20, President Clinton ordered a cruise missile attack on two suspected terrorist training camps in Afghanistan and a suspected chemical plant in Sudan.

Liberia: On September 27, 1998, America deployed a response and evacuation force of 30 U.S. military personnel to increase the security force at the U.S. Embassy in Monrovia.

1999-2001 - Timor-Leste: Limited number of U.S. military forces deployed with the United Nations-mandated International Force for Timor-Leste are restoring peace in Timor-Leste.

- Serbia: Operation Allied Force: US and NATO aircraft began a major bombardment of Serb and Serb positions in Kosovo on 24 March 1999, during the Kosovo War, due to Serbian President Slobodan's refusal to end the crackdown on ethnic Albanians in Kosovo. This operation ended on 10 June 1999, when Milosevic agreed to withdraw his troops from Kosovo. In response to the situation in Kosovo, NATO sent KFOR peacekeepers to ensure peace under UN Security Council Resolution 1244.

From 2000-2009

2000 - Sierra Leone: On May 12, 2000, a U.S. Navy patrol boat was deployed to Sierra Leone to support the country's evacuation operations if necessary.

2000 - Nigeria: Special forces troops are sent to Nigeria to conduct a training mission in the county.

2000 - Yemen: On October 12, 2000, after the attack on the USS Cole in the port of Aden, Yemen, military personnel were deployed to Aden.

East Timor: On 25 February 2000, a small number of US military personnel were deployed to support the East Timor Administration (UNTAET.)

On April 1, 2001, a mid-air collision between a U.S. Navy EP-3E ARIES II signal surveillance aircraft and a People's Liberation Army (PLAN) J-

8II interceptor aircraft resulted in an international dispute between the United States and the United States

The Republic of China called the Hainan Island incident.

2001 presents -Afghanistan War: The War on Terror begins with Operation Enduring Freedom.

On October 7, 2001, the U.S. The Armed Forces invaded Afghanistan in response to the September 11 attacks and to begin the combat action in Afghanistan against Al Qaeda terrorists and their Taliban supporters.

Yemen: On November 3, 2002, an American predator of the MQ-1 fired a Hellfire missile at a car in Yemen killing Al-Qaeda leader Salim Sinan al-Harethi, an al-Qaeda leader believed to be responsible for the attack on the USS Cole.

2002 - Philippines: OEF-Philippines, In January, U.S. 'combat support forces' were deployed Filipino women to train with, help, and advise the

Philippine armed forces in improving their 'counter-terrorism capabilities.'

On 25 September 2002, in response to a rebellion in Côte d'Ivoire, US military personnel traveled to Côte d'Ivoire to assist in the evacuation of US citizens from Bouaké.

2003-2011 - Iraq War: Operation Iraqi Freedom, March 20, 2003, The United States is leading a coalition that includes the United Kingdom, Australia, and Poland to invade Iraq, with the stated goal of 'disarming Iraq in the pursuit of peace, stability and security, both in the Gulf region and in the United States.'

Liberia: Second Liberian Civil War, On June 9, 2003, President Bush reported that on June 8, he had sent approximately 35 U.S. Marines to Monrovia, Liberia, to help secure the U.S. Embassy in Nouakchott, Mauritania, and to assist in any necessary evacuations from Liberia or Mauritania.

Georgia and Djibouti: 'US combat and support forces' have been deployed to Georgia and Djibouti to 'counter-terrorism capabilities.'

Haiti: 2004 Haitian coup occurs, The United States first sent 55 military-equipped combat to increase security forces from the U.S. Embassy there and protect U.S. citizens and property from light. Later, an additional 200 U.S. military personnel were sent to prepare the way for a United Nations interim multinational force, MINUSTAH.

2004 - War on Terror: U.S. counterterrorism activities were underway in Georgia, Djibouti, Kenya, Ethiopia, Yemen, and Eritrea.

2004 present: the U.S. deploys drone strikes to help war in northwestern Pakistan

2005-06 - Pakistan: President Bush deploys troops from the U.S. Army Air Defense Brigades to provide humanitarian assistance to remote villages in Pakistan's Kashmir Mountain ranges hit by a powerful earthquake.

Lebanon: Part of the 24th Marine Expeditionary Unit begins the evacuation of U.S. citizens ready to leave the country in the face of an Israeli ground invasion and continued fighting between Hezbollah and the Israeli army.

- The meeting in Mogadishu on November 4, 2007, Somali Pirate boarded and attacked a North Korean merchant ship. U.S. Navy ships and a helicopter patrolling at the time responded to the attack. Once the ship was freed from the pirates, U.S. forces were permitted to board and assist the injured crew and manipulate the surviving pirates.

Somalia: Battle of Ras Kamboni, On January 8, 2007, as the conflict between the

The Union of Islamic Courts and the Transitional Federal Government continue, an armed vessel AC-130 is conducting an airstrike on a suspected al-Qaeda operative, along with other Islamist fighters, on Badmadow Island, near Ras Kamboni in southern Somalia.

South Ossetia, Georgia: Helped Georgia obtain humanitarian aid, helped transport Georgian forces from Iraq during the conflict. In the past, the United States has provided training and weapons to Georgia.

2010-17

2010- al-Qaeda insurgency in Yemen: The United States has launched a series of drone strikes against suspected al-Qaeda and al-Shabaab positions in Yemen.

2010-11 - Operation New Dawn, February 17, 2010, U.S. Secretary of Defense Robert Gates announced that as of September 1, 2010, the name 'Operation Iraqi Freedom' will be replaced by 'Operation New Dawn.' This coincided with the reduction of American troops to 50,000 men.

2011 - 2011 military intervention in Libya: Operation Dawn Dawn, United States and coalition enforcing UN Security Council Resolution 1973 with bombing by Libyan forces.

2011 - Osama bin Laden is killed by U.S. military forces in Pakistan as part of Operation Neptune Spear.

Drone strikes on al-Shabab militants begin in Somalia. It is the 6th nation in which such strikes have been carried out, including Afghanistan, Pakistan, Iraq, Yemen, and Libya.

2011 present - Uganda: U.S. combat troops sent as advisors to Uganda.

Jordan: 150 U.S. troops deployed to Jordan to help contain the Syrian civil war within Syria's borders.

2012 - Turkey: 400 soldiers and two Patriot missile batteries sent to Turkey to prevent any missile launches from Syria.

Chad: 50 U.S. troops have deployed to the African country of Chad to help evacuate U.S. citizens and embassy staff from Bangui, the capital of the neighboring Central African Republic, in the face of rebel advances toward the city.

Mali: U.S. forces assisted U.S. forces in French operation Serval with refueling and airlift aircraft.

2013 - Somalia: US Air Force aircraft supported the French attempt to rescue hostages from Bullo Marer. However, they did not use weapons.

2013 - Korean crisis of 2013

2013 - Navy SEALs carried out a raid in Somalia and may have killed a senior Al-Shabaab official, while another raid took place in Tripoli, Libya, where special operations forces captured

Abu Anas al Libi (also known as Anas al-Libi.)

2014 present - Uganda: V-22 Ospreys, MC-130s, KC-135s (about 2 and a half minutes), and other U.S. soldiers are sent to Uganda to continue to help African forces search for Joseph Kony.

2014-present - U.S. intervention in Iraq: Hundreds of U.S. soldiers deployed to protect

And advise Iraqi and Kurdish fighters. In August, the U.S. The Air Force performed a humanitarian airlift and the United States.

The navy has launched a series of airstrikes against forces aligned by the Islamic State throughout northern Iraq.

2014 - U.S. Rescue Mission in Syria: The United States attempted to rescue James Foley and other hostages held by ISIL. Airstrikes were carried out at the ISIL military base known as the 'Osama bin Laden camp.' Meanwhile, during the bombings, Delta teams parachuted near a high-value ISIL prison. Main roads were blocked to prevent any target from escaping. When no hostages were found, American troops began house-to-house searches. At that time, ISIL militants began arriving in the area. Heavy fighting took place until the Americans decided to abandon the mission because the hostages were nowhere in the area. Although the mission failed, at least five ISIL militants

were killed, but an American troop was wounded. According to reports, Jordan played a role in the operation, and that a Jordanian soldier was also wounded. This has not been confirmed.

2014 -U.S.-led intervention in Syria: U.S. aircraft bomb Islamic State positions in Syria. Airstrikes on al-Qaeda, al-Nusra Front, and Khorasan positions are also being carried out.

2014- Intervention against the Islamic State of Iraq and the Levant: Syrian local forces and US-led coalition forces launch a series of airstrikes against ISIL and al-Nusra Front positions in Iraq and Syria.

- Hostage rescue operations in Yemen in 2014 against al-Qaeda: On November 25, US SEAL and Yemeni special forces launched an operation in Yemen to try to rescue eight hostages held by al-Qaeda.

Although the operation was successful, no American hostages were secured. In the first attempt, six Yemenis, a Saudi, and an Ethiopian were rescued. On December 4, 2014, al-Qaeda in the Arabian Peninsula (AQAP) threatened to execute Somers if the United States failed to reach unspecified commands. AQAP also said they would be executed if the United States attempted another rescue operation. On 6 December, a second operation was launched. 40 U.S. SEALs and 30

Yemeni troops have been deployed to the compound. A 10-minute fire battle took place before U.S. troops could enter where the remaining hostages (Somers and Korkie) were being held. They were alive but mortally wounded. The surgery was done in the air during the flight away from the site. Korkie died in flight, and Somers died once landed on USS Makin Island. No U.S. troops were killed/injured, but one Yemeni soldier was wounded.

- April 30, 2015, U.S. sends ships to the Strait of Hormuz to protect ships after the Iranian seizure of a commercial ship: The U.S. Navy deploys warships to protect U.S. commercial ships crossing the Strait of Hormuz from Iranian interference. Concerns were also raised that Iranian ships were lagging a U.S. container ship. Iran also fired shots over the bow and seized a Marshall Islands-registered vessel as part of a long-running dispute between the two nations.

A gas chamber is a device to kill humans or animals with gas, consisting of a sealed chamber in which a toxic or asphyxia gas is introduced. The most used toxic agent is hydrogen cyanide; carbon dioxide and carbon monoxide were also used. Gas chambers have been used as a method of execution for convicted prisoners in the United States since the 1920s and continue to be a method of lawful execution in three states. During the Holocaust, large-scale gas chambers designed to kill en masse were used by

Nazi Germany as part of their genocide programmed, as well as by the independent state of Croatia at the Jasenovac concentration camp. The use of gas chambers in North Korea has also been reported.

George S. Patton

Senior officer

George Smith Patton, Jr. was a senior officer in the U.S. Army, who commanded the United States.

Seventh Army in the Mediterranean and European theaters of World War II but is best known for its leadership of the U.S. Wikipedia.

Born: November 11, 1885, San Gabriel, CA Died: 21 December 1945, Heidelberg, Germany

Enterré: Luxembourg American Cemetery and Memorial, Hamm, Luxembourg, Luxembourg

Infants: George Patton IV, Beatrice Smith, Ruth Against Battles and Wars: Mexican Revolution, World War II.

The Second World War included all aircraft used by countries that had been at war during World War II since the period between their accession to the conflict and the end of the conflict for them. Aircraft developed but not

operationally used during the war are in the prototypes section at the end.

Prototype aircraft entered service under a unique design number are ignored in Favour of the service version. The date the aircraft entered service or first flew if the service date is not known or if it has not entered service follows the name, followed by the country of origin and major users in wartime. Aircraft used in multiple roles are listed only in their primary roles unless specialized versions have been built for other roles.

Aircraft used by neutral countries such as Spain, Switzerland, and Sweden or countries that have not had significant combat such as most in South America (except for Brazil) are not included.

The Auschwitz concentration camp was a network of German Nazi concentration camps and extermination camps built and operated by the

Third Reich in the Polish areas annexed by Nazi Germany during World War II.

The Holocaust (from the Greek ὁλόκαυστο holocausts: helos, 'whole' and kausts, 'burnt,') also known as the Shoah, was a genocide in which about six million Jews were killed by the Nazi regime of Adolf Hitler and his collaborators. Some historians use a Holocaust definition that includes the five

million additional non-Jewish victims of the Nazi massacres, bringing the total to about eleven million.

Murders took place throughout Nazi Germany and the territories occupied by Germany.

From 1941 to 1945, Jews were systematically murdered in a genocide, one of the largest in history, and are part of a wider set of acts of oppression and assassination of various ethnic and political groups in Europe by the Nazi regime. All arms of the German bureaucracy were involved in the planning and realization of the genocide, transforming the Third Reich into a 'genocidal state.' Other victims of Nazi crimes included Roma, ethnic Poles and other Slavs, Soviet prisoners of war, communists, homosexuals, Jehovah's Witnesses, and the mentally and physically disabled. In total, about 11 million people (about twice the population of Arizona) were killed, including about one million Jewish children. Of the nine million Jews who had resided in Europe before the Holocaust, about two-thirds were killed. A network of about 42,500 facilities in Germany and the German-occupied territories was used to focus victims on slave labor, mass murder, and other human rights violations. It is estimated that more than 200,000 people are responsible for the Holocaust.

Homelife most when on their lives as if war were not even going on- things were limited, but life was not all bad for us workers and stay-at-home spouses.

Persecution and genocide were perpetrated in stages, culminating in what has been called the 'final solution to the Jewish question (die Endl-sung der Juden Frage,) the agenda for exterminating Jews in Europe. Initially, the German government passed laws to exclude Jews from civil society, first the Nuremberg Laws of 1935. A network of concentration camps was established in 1933 and ghettos were established after the outbreak of World War II in 1939. In 1941, as Germany conquered new territories in Eastern Europe, specialized paramilitary units called Einsatzgruppen were used to murder about two million Jews and 'partisans,' often in mass shootings. By the end of 1942, victims were regularly transported by freight trains to specially constructed extermination camps where, although they survived the journey, most were systematically killed in gas chambers. The campaign of murder continued until the end of the Second World War in Europe in April-May 1945.

Overall, Jewish armed resistance was limited. The most notable exception was the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising of 1943 when thousands of poorly armed Jewish fighters kept the Waffen-SS at bay for four weeks. An estimated 20,000 to 30,000 Jewish partisans actively fought against the Nazis and their

collaborators in Eastern Europe. French Jews were also continually active in the French Resistance, which led a guerrilla campaign against the Nazi and Vichy French authorities. In total, more than a hundred-armed Jewish uprisings took place.

The war on terror, also known as the Global War on Terrorism, refers to the international military campaign that began after the September 11 attacks on the United States. The fight is still going on and the question is why ...? 2017 Bladimir Putin - and the Russian War - is being discussed by Trump, but not fully declared from 0719-2017.

Part:

Black Grandpa- 'Such a good girl when I make her one by force. Look how wet you are. He takes his finger and runs to my soft slit.

Neveah- he lifted his finger to me, and I opened my mouth immediately. He is getting his finger and I am closing my mouth, sucking him. My tongue hovers around and I moan in my taste. I watch his jaw stick to the feeling that he is coming out and coming back to it, looking at him, watching his next move. Slowly lick with the full face of his tongue up between my folds and find my clit and suck on it. My hand immediately finds his hair as I tangle my

fingers in it, my eyes pressed to close as my back braces off the bed. I moan as he complains against her, sending vibrations all over my body.

Then suddenly, his tongue arrows inside me. He fucked my pussy with his tongue as my hands grabbed the bedsheets. 'Fuck!' I grind my hips at the pace he fucks my pussy. My footrests on his back between the blades of his shoulder. I complain about the sudden loss of his tongue from inside me but soon it is replaced by two fingers, his tongue returns to my slightly flickering clitoris. I moan as loudly as my hands reach my breasts, knead them as he pumps his fingers in and out of my pussy. At home and abroad. At home and abroad. His tongue works my clit expertly up. My toes start to curl, and I can feel that fashionable feeling building in the hole of my stomach.

'Fuck me as a child.' Hand back to his hair and I towed it lightly, his fingers working faster and faster. At home and abroad. At home and abroad. 'Oh my God, I'm going to daddy!' I squeaked aloud. 'Don't stop, don't stop fucking.' I am complaining as my leg starts to vibrate.

Suddenly, he curls his fingers inside me, hitting that spot that drives me completely insane at the same time he sucks on my clitoris.

My body explodes in orgasm, screaming by his name as I lift my back out of bed, my body trembling and convulsing under his spell. My legs start to

try to close, and my pussy sensitivity is almost unbearable as he still attacks her beautifully, and his hands push my legs away, fingers digging in my thighs.

'Baby.' Ah shit! I squeaked as my back lifted off the bed again, my hands slapping down against the bed, sweeping the bedsheets as my joints turned white. His fingers pull out of my flowing pussy, and I moan for him. His tongue licks my sensitive vagina, almost calming it down. My body is convulsing as it clicks on the clitoris.

I am whispering. He now completely withdraws from me, not before slapping her brazenly. make my back arch again. I watch as he licks his lips with a broad smile playing on them. I am offended, a little smile also plays on mine. Exhausted.

Before I turned around to face this genuine issue, I felt a stupid smile on my face. I rode this cute girl with all my bodywork, a physical voice that did not drown, except when she shook her body by attacking her, we heard screams from our mouths.

Her breasts were trembling, and her stomach fluctuated with my movements, which made me unable to move. Her right hand stretched between us and began to wave to her. As she was breathing erratically, she began to

breathe, and the scream faded. Somehow, she was getting hotter and hotter and pressed me so much that I thought it would drive me.

Then I screamed so loud that I knew I could hear the whole building, and then I felt something flowing around her, and then I realized that I was as deep as she was, grabbing her rocking body and beating her.

I open my heavy eyes. My fingers are soaked, sighing, and laughing at it. He did not even touch me.

I am so nervous that I can barely think straight. All the rest of my friends have already gone further at 13 I am sure I am the only virgin left in my school. 'Focus on your homework' was the order of every adult in my life I sneaked down starting from the second grade, riding full to a prestigious college that did not allow for a lot of distractions. This means that I was on my way to being superior, I did not have much in the way of social life. Some friends from study groups, people I have been talking to in my extracurricular activities, but I did not think there was anything further for me.

You are a hot little girl. My girly hole hardened, and I had to hide it from her. She is very sexy, and I do not know why she is wearing murder gear. She did not want to impress me, she never showed great interest in me, so why did she do this? Things may have changed, but have they changed?

The next morning, I drove to the train station for the first time without walking as I did for the last year or more and kept going over the day's events. As a brother who protects me, I was thinking about 9/11, I stayed with his ghost in my mind until the train I would see a delay on my walk, that I am looking at started to leave with a wave for the engineer.

After finally saying goodbye to my sisters in the moments of lost time in my memories of walking this path to remember, I found some sadness in my eyes looking at myself in the car mirror, but I do not remember anything. I hugged my sister again, but surprisingly as she descended to me, I wanted her to hug me too.

I gave her the hug saying she had to take a young soul for me to see she wanted to show me more death and choices, a dying child is in my arms named Amy then in a fast moment ascended above me, ripped away, as I got on the train to anywhere it would take me to get away from this town and forget my past and what I just saw in moments of death, they laughed too much around me. In a few minutes, I was gone, she finally left beyond the sky. Wave to them when they leave yet there was no one outside the train car, so the others in the car with me just think I am nuts. They waved to me as soon as they saw me looking at them yet in a way that was like a wave you give a child that is slow in the head.

‘I see things you cannot understand, I am not crazy.’

Part:

The next day when she returned home, she completely avoided eye contact with me and revealed her body. She is a girl. I know I noticed that her body is a little shaky. I deliberately avoided eye contact with her and continued reading. I made her look better without seeing me inside, I know she is not incredibly happy. I went away from home to my favorite fast-food restaurant to celebrate my short-term freedom to be a fugitive and do not understand why you cannot remember why I am running it.

After- I got home, I saw my parked car in the barn because my grandmother sent their car to the airport to get me, and it was just left behind. ‘I have a whole week to start over in school,’ she said. Then without remembering, in my loss of time, I put on my swimsuit and went to the school's swimming pool. It was the perfect start for my vacation ending that was so needed. I was incredibly happy. It was ridiculous.

The rest of Saturday is peaceful and calm. I listen to my favorite music and watch some music videos on my computer. For the rest of the day, I do nothing and enjoy every minute, until death will find me, one more day I said to myself.

I was taking a bath by the swimming pool that night also for the next school day to come.

I press my lips together and insult

'A psychic addict, she won't resist for long.'

'You can't make a move without consulting the cards, the stars, what you have.' I smile, strangely slanted from the lips, as my gaze arrows between them, unsure how to respond, especially with the way Naddalin is seen in my face. But she turns around, holding a hand, and decides to stop me when she says, 'Please, no confessions.' smiling and shaking her head. 'If I have any hope of enjoying those huge bulges there, then I have no luxury of regretting my decision. Although you may want to rethink it a little bit about being a gift. 'About it - I see Naddalin before me in my room and she goes through me as if I become her and she is now me as if a change of minds and the look of the same body yet not. I begin, thinking That I may also admit that they are obviously on me anyway. 'A psychic addict?' Is this anything like a groupie? I followed her to the office at the back of the house, although she was wearing the same things as the day before.

She shrugs, tilting her head in a way that allows her locks to fall into her face. 'Guess I'll séance,' she says, pushing her hair back and revealing a scar on her forehead.

We smiled at each other yet that is my face she is doing it through. I lay on my stomach because she was lying on the couch next to me, and I did the same. We lay there for a few minutes, not talking to each other, so I changed my mood. 'It is okay Nevaeh. The body is a natural thing, no need to be ashamed.'

Naddalin, my dead sister, is a long-haired brown-haired person who covers her forehead with a scar on her and ears she did not like after piercing her ear, leaving the only front part of her face visible, and a smile that illuminates the darkest days.

I have had many fantasies about my sister but now she is in me, and I always stop before going too crazy, yet I miss her so much. It would be a pleasure to be pleased by having her live in me, but the possibility of me sharing a bed with my sister close is more than dreaming, but I knew if it ever actually happened, and I would not refuse her. She is so beautiful to deny it and I will not.

I think about it like this...

Part:

My goal is to empower people, help them live better, more fulfilled lives, by accessing their intuition, that is all.' She glances at me, green eyes catching me staring into me and not showing blue out of me at this moment, making my stomach go weird again.

'And, like- I never wanted to empower people,' said Naddalin?' I ask, feeling all fluttery under Nevaeh's gaze into my eyes and the soul.

Everything started fine. As fine and normal as any other day. I woke up, showered, dressed, stopped by the kitchen to toss some cereal down the sink before chasing it with some OJ I would swishers in a glass-my usual morning routine so Jaylynn would grow in me, I will think I ate the breakfast I made.

I look at Naddalin in the mirror in the girl's bathroom now at the school, I read his expression and I know it is as good as done. Whatever the twins want, they are now going to have twins. 'We'll discuss it later,' Naddalin says, trying a stern look, but the gesture is empty, everyone knows it except her. I get up from the couch and hear the door, needing to bring Charm home before the sky returns. Just be there for her. She takes the first step, a dark look at mine.

'That's all she wants from you anyway. She bends down to kiss me as if over me in a way, gathering me in her arms, her hands moving over me and warming me to my heart. Walking away to look at me with those deep, soulful

eyes, the rock with my pen, my eternal partner, whose intentions are so strong and good, I can only hope that she never learns from my betrayal, reneging on my promise not to visit Naddalin's grave just after, I said that I would not do that again.

She cups my face between the palms of her hands and her peers in my eyes. My sense of mood shifts easily as if they were hers.

I avoid my gaze, thinking of Haven, and being Naddalin there, and all the editing errors I cannot seem to stop doing. Can I erase my thoughts and shake my head, not wanting to visit this place when I say, 'See you tomorrow at your grave?'

Barely finishing the words before she bends down to kiss me again, a pulsed energy slips between her lips and mine as the rest of her soul comes out of my mouth like ashes and burning paper.

Hold a moment for as long as we can, none of us are ready to break away until the twin chorus of bells of the golden dooms of the Saint Mary's Ukrainian Catholic plays the time and the song, 'Ew! Total end to the moments! Do we have to watch this every day?

I look to the world that I see, we are heading into The Third World War in short called Капона a new type of genocide, with cataclysm, and I do not

know how this will seem like it is not going to be fighting as we know it is going to be a war of minds of cognitive tasks taken away, from reason instilling fears and taking away of clean health and health rights of the old and young, killing, and make all that is not part of the radical aspects of The New World Order.

The war-thinking rant that mutates, and has clues, to take all our thoughts and movements away from the brain, as if the programmed and fabricated life of a political theory derived from divided states, calls for class war and leads to a society in which all property is publicly owned, and each person is employed and paid according to his or her abilities and needs.

The political, economic, and social principles and policies that are particularly advocated by the theory and practice of socialism, including the theory of labor of value, dialectic materialism, class conflict, and the dictatorship of the proletariat until the creation of a class-free society.

The political principles of the Workers' Party in the national socialist world, racist, authoritarian, or behavioral extremist views. They take people to quarantine camps now daily increasingly are taken away by force over pandemics.

'Tomorrow.' Naddalin smiles, seeing me safely into my car before heading off.

Nodding and smiling the whole way to school as complains on and on about anything and everything, or France and my travels with my class, as I sit there beside her yet no one can see me talking to her they see nothing yet, I see her there yet they do not, stopping, turning, speeding, slowing, chasing yellow lights, red lights, green lights, waiting for the moment where I can see Naddalin again as me, not her angel-like soul.

Knowing the mere sight of her will turn all darkness to light for me, even if the effect is just temporary just like the sky above.

Remember my thoughts for the moment, that Human trafficking is the trafficking of human beings for forced labor, sexual slavery, or commercial sexual exploitation of traffickers or others.

This may include providing the husband in the context of forced marriage, organ, or tissue extraction, including surrogacy and egg removal.

Human trafficking can take place within a country or across the country. Human trafficking is a crime against a person because of the violation of the victim's rights to move through coercion and commercial exploitation.

The action or fact of treating someone unfairly to benefit from their work. The action of making use of and benefiting from resources. coercion the practice of persuading someone to do something by using force or threats.

(My days at this point)

I remember in a Miraglia activation fog, thus in my notes of self-care I feel the need to state the need in reducing brain inflammation, self-care in the diet has started, noted in my past is low excarnated blood, this showing in the hands Raynaud's or Achenbach's Syndrome (Popped Blood Vessels in Finger,) cognitive mind update via moments of covid times statements are body slight pain of body mind and muscle fatigue, low energy improvements due taking vitamins, and daily Aspen 325 for blood thinner for the times due to covid, the mask is being used at all times when outdoors.

Improvements after influenzas shoot were given, chest air longs feeling tight at times yet not to the point of alarming, thus inflamed, headaches noted via reports of the times of the life of pandemics, likewise, anxiety's do to thought to be Brain Inflammation, thus inflammatory molecules, adipocytokines histamines, sleeping is improving, no alcohol, movements to refined carbs, thus cortisol's are good at this time, stress managements are improvements, excises lactated due to 2021 times, now post covid improvements, this not thinking Parkinson's yet not ruled out thought to be, depression was due to covid- post, anxiety's, thus MRI reported nothing to note, inattention/chronic fatigue syndrome, stated to be notable around 2017, yet has been less or mild in the

past. Looking into the past of Sirs not notable yet, 'chills and shaking' neuropsychiatric thoughts came up, yet Doctor reports hold as fine at this time.

Loss of small is reported Chest pain when doing activities, Difficulty breathing when walking upstairs or high movements Leaning forward when sitting to breathe more easily, Rapid breathing (tachypnea) or shortness of breath, thus 'brain encephalitis.'

Symptoms related to PD, little finger tremor thus school past reports being Localized 'dissociative amnesia' due to Trauma via teachers.

Part:

Without letting me move, put on a swimsuit, diving underwater, dragging it to my ankle under the splashes, and I have flashes of a girl named Zoe and forbidden romance - so far - 'This is life - no?'

I see the true story in my mind as if I had become at that moment Zoe remembers increasingly about her life, her hometown of Hastings - no more than a short drive from my hometown I see the end of her life all too soon, and tragically like an obsession.

I see the story of a writer like me who wants to do the right thing for a man who wants a legacy of a humble and passionate young man who falls in love with a young girl, after moving to the United States from Italy, knows

nothing about the ways of the old century and challenging work, will go through this romantic novel, finding his way to old age, where all he did is look back, in search of lost time, and say I did well.

Zoe touched my life, including the book, which I trusted when in my works that night, with her collection that became more timeless - 'she will remember - 'and she won't.'

Thinking about this, 'I'd rather have a painting,' I say, seriously pretending to be me now and not feel. 'You know, it is a wonderful thing that I could hang on the wall saying I should be remembered for something other than an expert in bathing. Or even a statue or a small cup would be good, no I have the Long Novel in the world on my shelves. The most abandoned book in history if read.'

I climb out of my pool, and peek around no longer me, somewhere between Naddalin and my real self that is not, right now, my ears are hardly believable when I start quoting many statistics about swimming never alone, and about a fantastic safety rating. I mean, I do not remember ever paying attention to safety when he was driving me.

'So-o, you give up riding the bus so you can drive instead? ...Smart.'

Said Ava.

I looked up and she was standing there. 'Who even cares about that?' 'I am not riding the bus now; I have to babysit you as underclassmen- pathetic!' She hooks her thumb over her shoulder, jabbing toward the big, black monstrosity partitions and grimacing at the sight of it.

'Is it a bus or a pappy car?' She squints, shielding her eyes from the sun as the door opens. Glancing at her. 'Whatever it is, one thing's for sure, it's a tragically middle-aged car not for a young girl like you.'

'You have a sore ass over the fact it's not yours.' Walking side by side, legs moving quickly, eyes focused on mine.

Ava looks mockingly, mocks the proud owner of my dirty little secret, about her control over my mind, and I am no more than the host.

Naddalin moves to protect me, considering I think to stay calm.

Do not do anything I peer over her shoulder, watching Naddalin barrel towards us like a train coming from the sky.

Staring at me with very deep eyes, very blue, everything blurs but her lips wet, smiling flashing our tattoo.

The last thing I think before I am fully absorbed is that it would be my fault if I kept my promise to Naddalin and stayed away from her when I now encountered her swirls of energy towards me, tugging, pulling me in, sucking

me in a spiral of darkness, pounding me with images - the tainted antidote to my unwise visit - all coming so quickly That I can hardly distinguish them.

But the individual images themselves are not important, it is the whole hero you want me to see. It all means clarifying one thing: now Ava charged the rest of us are just dolls, pulled by her chains thanks to our grandmother. Time ripped at that moment, I glanced at her, eyes narrowed in silent agreement. But Ava just laughs in my face saying where have you been, too concerned with the proper care and feeding of my baby that I did not remember having, bother with what anyone thinks-including me. And while that is the way a good, responsible, parental-type figure should think, something about it bugs me.

Then I think about this and say to myself, 'All my friends are either in jail or young children in hell! She told Nevaeh to herself, just before the last days of her life, or the one I remember when I thought I was dying.

'Nevaeh is the only girl I know who would be like a young teenager when she was on trial asking to approach the bench in court and do it and ask the judge to suck a fibula from her ass. Said Hope.

(6 months back)

I shout to everyone in mental school, 'oh God take me to the book city! My day started like any other in my childhood at the time after my 14th birthday, and even a few years before that, although I think hard about it. Suck my dildo for practice, and eat my daughters-comings like I always did before school after hearing others in my gym class talk about doing this, even in the nuthouse when I was lost thinking I was in a new world not mine and even like Naddalin, nothing changed my libido to be naked and wanting Lily and Chiaz to feel me, and wanting both made me more than crazy as I was 14 at the age of 18 until I was safe and rehabilitated, so they say I was even as a child who wants love is what drove me crazy- I wondered even if I was ever dead? So, I was never dead, it is Naddalin who passed, not me, I am still Nevaeh, and we will always be, and I always have my fantasies and my stories of escape to be out of my head in pain and pain. I still have moments when I was wasted from time to time, in deep thoughts...

-Then-

I narrow my gaze until everything surrounding us blurs. 'And that's for you to leave me alone.' Heart rising to my cheeks as her gaze deepens to a leer.

'Farid not, darling.' She laughs, looking over me and shaking her head. 'Trust me, you want way more than that. But not to worry, it is like I said,

I will wait for as long as it takes for you to remember all the days of the past you have forgotten.

It is Naddalin I am worried about not you and I understand what is going on said Ava to me at that moment.

-And-

Like a child I trusted. And you should worry too. From what I saw those last hundred years, she is an impatient man. Bit of a hedonist. Did not wait for much of anything as far as I could tell.'

Part:

(At the castle)

Back in the world of Hells Purgatory, I swallow hard and try to keep my composure, reminding me not to fall for in bait like I did be for as Karly now Naddalin, and in the now has a knack for locating my weakness, my psychological strength as in the past and playing this part and lives to exploit it.

I swallow hard and try to stay calm, reminding myself not to fall bait into the past of this girl that was once and now is me.

'Don't be a patron, she was always one to keep the entrances - wearing armbands that are black and white stripes, appearing inconsolable at the vigil -

but believe me, never did the foam have time to adhere to her shoe before she was back on the prowler.

I am trying to drown her sorrows in anything, or should I say whom she could. And even if you would rather not believe it, take it from someone who has been there all along.

Naddalin is not expecting anyone currently, so she is ascending and descending the 7 worlds above and 7 below with Earth in-between. And she certainly never waited for you.

I am trying to drown her sorrows in anything, or should I say whom she could. And even if you would rather not believe it, take it from someone who has been there all along. Naddalin is not expecting anyone. And she certainly never waited for you.

I pretend to breathe deeply yet there is no need, filling my head with words, music, mathematical equations that go far beyond my skills, enough to drown out words that are like carefully sharp arrows directed directly at my heart.

Yep.

'I saw it with my own eyes- everything, I never believed in, I did it!'

Smiling as she slips into a thick cockney pronunciation and backs off again. 'I have seen it too,' said Ava to Nevaeh who was coming in and out of the world in her mind.

~*~

Nevaeh- 'It broke all these hearts.'

'I remember that!'

Ready to take it back wherever it was, no questions asked. Although unlike me and, I am afraid, quite unlike you, I did not like it. What face is something you would never do?

'That's not true! Said Ava at the moment.

I cry, my voice hoarse, and very dry, as if it were the first time that I used it all day - it was so bad.

'I have had Naddalin with me too since the moment we met-I-I quit not trying to say that I am not gifted too, in seeing things like this, we are the fallen, said Ava.

Knowing I should not have started. There is no point in engaging in the struggle.

'Sorry, Darlin.' But you are wrong. Said Nevaeh. Along with that, you never had Naddalin love you as I did, over you loved our mother more than anyone.

A pure kiss here I give you to show that is not true, a little sweat holding your hand there-' Ava shrugs, look with contempt.

Ava- 'Totally, Forever, I did, you think that some pathetic attempts at second base can satisfy an avaricious, self-centered, self-centered girl like her? For four hundred years no less?

'You do not remember the past, or the now so why do you even try to think?'

I think like your teachers, 'Diarrhea of the Mouth,' is right- Ganser syndrome is a rare dissociative disorder characterized by nonsensical or wrong answers to questions and other dissociative symptoms such as fugue, amnesia, or conversion disorder, often with visual pseudo hallucinations and a decreased state of consciousness.

The syndrome has also been called a nonsense syndrome, balderdash syndrome, syndrome of approximate answers, hysterical pseudodementia, or prison psychosis. The term prison psychosis is sometimes used because the

syndrome occurs most frequently in prison inmates, where it may be seen as an attempt to gain leniency from prison or court officials.

Psychological symptoms resemble the patient's sense of mental illness rather than any recognized category.

The syndrome may occur in people with other mental disorders such as schizophrenia, depressive disorders, toxic states, paresis, alcohol use disorders, and factitious disorders. Ganser syndrome can sometimes be diagnosed as merely malingering, but it is more often defined as a dissociative disorder.

I am worried about Naddalin all my life when she was alive, yet Nevaeh more as my big sister. And you should be worried about yourself, too. From what I have seen in the last hundred years has gone by now, an impatient woman here you are everything. A little hedonistic about remembering something that was in your past and is not making you now, 'let it go.'

Did not wait for much of anything as much as I could say yet I did not. I swallow hard and try to stay calm, reminding myself not to fall for his bait. Naddalin has a knack for locating my weakness, my psychological strength, and lives to exploit it.

I am trying to drown her sorrows in anything, or should I say whom she could. And even if you would rather not believe it, take it from someone who has been there all along. Naddalin is not expecting anyone to stand up for her; she passed fair to young. And she certainly never waited for you.

'Don't be a shepherd about all this, she's always been the one to keep the doors open for you it's in your writings – back to the times of childhood of wearing arm badges that are black and white lines to show friendships, she has been a hero to you as you are to me, and seem ruthless at the vigil - but believe me, the foam didn't have time to hold on to her shoes she had to walk just to make others think differently before she came back on the prowler of having too.

'Ava was there for you, you need to understand that, deep down she was looking out for you by being the one that looked the vilest and at times just nasty, it was that she loved you.

I am blind over her, and I can still see more than what you are now, overseeing from the inside of my mind out not seeing the world you and I think but the eyes of the brain to get the picture, and even this she did to me was so I would see light in the darkness.' Said Emmah.

Nevaeh- I take a deep breath and pull back into my true life, fill my head with words, music, mathematical equations that extend beyond my skills, anything to drown out words that are like discreet arrows that aim directly at my heart.

'Yes.'

I saw it with my eyes, I did your right!

Smiling as she slipped into a thick Cockney pronunciation and back again. Haven saw it, too.

'She broke her poor heart.' Said Emmah.

Ready to bring her back, no matter where she is, no questions.

'Really? After what she has done to you.'

Though, unlike, I am afraid, quite unlike love you Ava was unconditional. Which, let us face it, is something you are never doing.

That is not true I cry, in a hoarse voice, and very dry, as if it were the first time that I had used it all day - it was so bad.

I have had Emmah since the moment we met I- I stop, knowing I should not have started. It is pointless to get involved in combat, so I let it go.

I swallow hard, forcing the calm I do not have when I say, 'That's far beyond what I ever got with Lily.

'Sorry,' but you are wrong you have never had a pure kiss here, a bit of sweaty holding a hand there, 'her ignored, contemptuous look.

'Not thanks to you,' spits her soul and mind also, a harsh look at mine. 'But, as I said, I am a woman who can understand.'

Nadalin is not a woman; she was a girl and yet she plays with you.

(I am shaking my head.)

'It's a shame you're too strong to play to believe is true.'

I do not want her to know that only Naddalin I know, that targeting the weakest timeless chakra, one of the seven energy centers in the body, is the fastest way to obliterate them.

Emmah- 'I can see you now,' she whispers, shaking voice, trembling hands, though I promised Naddalin that I would not, even though I know better to try to think I could remember.

I am arguing, wondering where she might have known. 'Slug me in my sacral center, perhaps?'

However, she just laughs, shaking her head saying: 'Don't forget, Luv, Naddalin was under the spell completely.

Nevaeh- She smiles at me, an imminent face until her glow cools down my cheek.

Which means she told me everything, answered every question we asked, including you being a good little girl.'

I have... where it matters. And do not think she does not know that. I stood there, refusing to answer, popped to appear composed, unmet, but too late.

'Don't worry. 'I am having a lot of fun watching you writing to try something like that.

Part:

(Fading in and out naturalistic and not)

Just one moment later, I do not have plans to go after you, she says. Besides, it will not be long until you squirm under me. Or even above me. One of the other will have sex. 'I will leave the details with you. But no matter what you want, you will not blame me either. Especially because I have what you want.

The antidote remedy for what you suffer from. I assure you,' Naddalin said. You are just going to have to find a way to win it, she says, too. You are just going to have to show me how much you want it.

I have gape, dry mouth, and soft jaw, remembering last Friday that seems many years away to me now, when Naddalin claimed the same thing pushing and pull time for me to see the truth, to me saying that she loves possessed me, and in a way, I agree with that and even changed parts of my writings without me even knowing that she did so.

So-o distracted by Naddalin's awakening within me - I have forgotten all this until now - to have her type as another chapter of the book of my life, I try to understand all the parts even if there have been ghosts in the text.

I- Emmah squeezes my lips together as my gaze meets her... fear-my hope rising for the first time in days.

Knowing that it is only a matter of time until the antidote is mine. I just need to find a way to get it from it.

'Oh, look at that. She smiles. 'It looks like you have forgotten everything about our date with fate.

(Time slips by)

Nevaeh- Then I am back in my bed, holding on to the book that I am writing, this book will be separated from me and will free me to apply or not I will be back to my conscientiousness but the conscientiousness.

-And-

I will be surprised to find out the state of darkness, pleasant and comfortable enough for my eyes, more than for fun, it seems incomprehensible, for no reason, anything It is dark I would like to ask you when you might: whistling train, which, getting closer.

Lengthy-time, I went to bed early. Sometimes rushlight closed my eyes so fast that I did not have time to say: I am asleep.

After half an hour, I thought it was time to find sleep and wake me up, but I would not do it if it were reserved, the book I imagined was still in my hands, turning out the light.

I continued to think, while I fell asleep, about what I just read, but these ideas, I took a strange turn, but it seemed to me that I was, at first seemed incomprehensible, and before the idea, existence must be after reservation. Time has not been kind to my mind.

I remember he did not even get dressed. She stepped out into the bottoms of her black sweatpants with nothing underneath, with thin straps outlining her tight breasts.

I have instinctively unfixed my hair - long and almost brown at the time, tossed her blue hooded top from the spring not yet summer days, and put on the first slippers that got in her way after spending the weekend together.

My mind drifts to the love of my life as a teenage girl, remember that I could not sleep until I would feel his touch, dumping out his condom after pulling it out of myself dripping out all the love onto my boobs, and licking them clean with my tongue, and just thrusting into hard orgasms just over the thoughts of him. I knew that he felt like she was indulging for the first time. So-o, real. It was the same for him. He could feel it adjusting to its size and length. They continued with sneers and kisses. He began to move slowly in it. The feeling spilling over their bodies, as if moving from one to the other, was incredible.

The little girl I once was wondering, her head to one side, and was barely able to contain the excitement and curiosity that shone brightly in her deep sky-blue eyes.

She had to be asleep hours earlier, the clock was ticking near midnight, but instead, she sat wrapped in an unfinished quilt on top of her bed, staring at her man sitting at the foot of the bed as he would come in the night to see her for love.

The man being her father did not bear any resemblance to the girl, except for his eyes that reflected her identically, down to the blue and yellow rays mixed in her iris.

Despite his tall and lean, the man was extremely thin and lacking in muscle, with pale skin and a pair of glasses that sat twisted on the narrow bridge of his nose - it seemed like an outdated version of the nerd, who spent most of their time inside playing video games.

His short dark hair, adorned with golden hair, stood wide over his head, and his features were stunningly handsome, for a man in his teen years. The edges of his eyes wrinkle dare as he smiles.

Chiaz- She opened her eyes with pleasure, but she also enjoyed her mimics. She curled up and lifted her pelvis to his. His pace was slow. It was great.

(The two danced with bodies merged into one. His pushes were fast, slow. He was going deep; he was moving shallowly. He felt Nevaeh and was

ready to give himself to him in full. She wanted to give it to him in full. The delight was amazing and intoxicating! When he reached the top, and his ghouls poured into it, he felt in the seventh heaven of happiness. She slid her fingers towards her clitoris and, without coming out of it, began to massage him. After a few minutes, she curled up forgiving loudly and bringing a smile of contentment and pride to his face. The two of them strained on the wooden surface, under the warm rays of the afternoon sun breathlessly they looked at each other. They sat there for so long, and then they dressed up. Nevaeh turned around without saying anything and slowly headed for the gate. He did not follow her. When he entered the backyard of his home, he saw his shadow leaning against the net and felt his gasping at it. Nevaeh smiled, overwhelmed by sudden happiness saying I will never forget this.)

Nevaeh- Time is running out and only memories remain. Like the memory of an adventure that left deep marks and wounds in two people.

Love and passion go hand in hand, but sometimes they can be independent of each other. Verbal arrangements can be violated.

Fate may have other plans for two people. Sometimes a man can seek freedom and diversity in the arms of a foreign woman, but not be ready to abandon the security his family with another gives him.

He is a coward; he is not ready for a substantial change. Sometimes a woman can try to have a relationship with a man, just like that- just passion and physical touch, just like men do.

To have an agreement that they will not fall for each other and will not let feelings get in the way. Trying, she may be on the verge of success, but in the end, she is going to be shattered... broken and collecting the pieces of your soul. Like lost time and hard to forget, but all the same, yet hard to keep memories.

Lost in the world of my deep mind, I know that is all too real after I succumb to death.

I tilt my head back, gazing despite my dark shadows, at an impressive structure that towers on the edge of the clearing, making the trees look like twigs by comparison.

The building looked as if the stone castle had been taken directly from the medieval period, brought to the island by chance, it was, and still breathtaking.

The castle is made of gray brick and colorful cream, with a stream of horizon running in front of the structure.

A short wooden bridge curves on the riverbed, leading towards the giant double wooden doors that lead inward.

The clearing itself is enormous and peeled off by forests on all sides. The green grass looked bright as if it were good.

Part:

(Class)

I squinted and gave her my attention back to the teacher, and when I began to understand, my instincts were stirring.

I saw that the morning had passed. We even talked for a while, and I shrugged my shoulders and my eyes faded away, still overly concerned about the event of fading in and out of time.

'I mean, don't let you down, dear but you have done nothing to,' but if it is a good dream, a pursuit, think about something virgin about the last places you love in your mind, I love to watch you get lost in deep thoughts!

(Girls Bathroom)

I stood in front of her, breathless, knowing that I had to stop it, at all costs, before it got out of hand.

Naddalin lifted her arm as if doing inside of me, and I started plowing through, and then she lowered it as fast as she laughed as she locked me in place.

'Take a deep breath,' she muttered, her lips grazing on the edge of my ears, fingers sliding over my shoulders, leaving an icy wake in their path. 'There is no need to panic. There is no need to see the spit in the glass looking back at you looking back at me.

I believe that between us, we can reach mutual agreement and find a way to solve something that can help you become great.

When I say, 'You can't say anything, and you convince me to sleep with you!'

'Wow-h' Nadalin smiled at me, raised her hands, and pretended to admit defeat, as she turned her back to the room. 'Who said anything about bumping the ugliest, friend?

She would throw her head back, laugh, let her creepy Uroboric tattoo flash in and out of sight that comes through the skin when she is to all intents and purposes.

I rushed to my desk, my cheeks burning, staring fixed to the floor, and spent the next forty minutes cringing, my classmates suddenly hysterical, every

time Nadalin directed a nasty sound of wet drips above me are coming my way and hitting my work, despite Millie's countless attempts to calm them down the others in my classroom of left behind, this is what we get a room that smells of rat crap and turpentine.

The moment the bell rang, I ran to the door. Franti arrived in Nadalin before Nadarin, believing that Nadalin would push her too far and that she would rob an act that no one of us could afford, and now Nadalin was holding the key.

Still, as I turned the knob, I heard, 'Forever?' Is there a minute? When I turned to Millie to see what she wanted, her mocking laughter fell behind, yet she was in my class like me, and still, she is more than me.

I paused, and the students huddled behind me, eager to go to the hall, where they could follow me and taunt me a little more.

'I've done it,' she smiles, harsh attitude, anxious voice, but still anxious for me to know that I am no longer the same girl in my mind, I have a new person. I approached her just as you told me.

'It's tame, you understand.'

I turn uncomfortably, moving my bag from one shoulder to another, wishing I had taken the time to learn to watch myself as if what I like remotely,

so I could keep an eye on lunch tables and ensure Naddalin sticks on the plan, and not getting my butt into too much trouble.

‘You're in good hands, body and mind and soul too.’ She said out of my mouth.

Interval:

‘Without you.’

I do not know what I am going to do around you, I do not know what to do without you keeping me going. I just want to be with you, you and I will last forever, even as time goes by...

(Hold my hand repeatedly.)

I do not know what I am going to do if I do not have you, I just want to see you.

(Last and last, time 4 with time.)

I just want to remember all the time with you I just want to be with you, I just want to be with you I do not know what I would have done without you.

I am getting old now, and it feels like it is weathering yet there is a child in me that wants to rip me out.

Yes, it is only a day from the coffin, or I am in it, and she is in the body to stay. In this life, I have done nothing but force myself to be someone I never wanted to be. Then see what I can show. I got everything I wanted, just not the way I wanted it to.

I sit with an unsatisfied heart thinking that life is so unfair, listening to my mind as it spins like a tornado across the desert and all the thoughts of what can and cannot rush like a building through my brain.

All this takes me to a place where I will never be again. I am not the same and do not remember why. If only- I had done this and not that ... If only that is all I am thinking about.

Nevertheless, I think of all the existences of the teenage-year era.

Why are teenagers asking you? So that was all that was real to me, it is not even in my story of life, it is lost in all the pages, the only thing I wanted, everything I still think about that was lost to me not being me. I was a fiery-haired beauty with big blue dog eyes. His eyelashes could put you in a trance by blinking.

I was small in stature, but I had everything. They were all going to get into my skirt, and why they could.

I had those soft pink lips, which could curl her toes even to this day, oh yes, I did! I am so young, but you grow old fast when you are used up like me, if you have nothing to keep you young and made to feel old by growing up beyond your years, why do I have to live?

Back when I was on the edge of adolescence, and my life was entertaining, enjoyable, and stimulating death was all I ever wanted and found all my lost time recaptured.

Everything looks so non-flawless when with it; I was looking back, and still is impeccable to me. But everything changes and everything moves on, lost to time. But I still have time to dance around me.

Emmah- 'And you were right.' It is nice to remember your past. I should not tell you, but we are having dinner tonight, in five minutes.

Yet we cannot be together as we would like to be, you see. That was a long time ago, time changes and so do people you are not held to your past. You feel that your head will explode; it will spin your brain numb. But is that what you would call love? Is this what we all come back to for more to read?

Why if it gives you pain? All I hear is, what I think... about nothing wanting to be a cry baby about not standing up for your rights, what I missed is

the time of your life, when all you did was think you could not have one when you passed up time to make it lost.

Nevaeh- I contemplate around, the desire of this old velvet sofa with lumpy cushions, knowing that it would give the perfect landing for when my body with me is so tired that I collapse and my head explodes quietly, for all the chatter- that it must here and there is no way to turn them off- they keep babbling in my mind. I need to have a real-life with real-real-you love all the things that are real- like real friends too, not just the fantasy world that you refuse to see that is not a reality.

Lost in thoughts pain was the juice that ignited my match in every breath that I had, and only then had the right moisture of feeling come to ease the feeling of pain, or what it took to destroy it, it the feeling of loss. We filled each other with our hopes in lost time, and dreams do not forget compassion was lost too.

Oh, lost time, of mine we filled each other up on the porches, and the gardens, and surrounding grounds too of my hometown, make no mistake time was not kind to me. But it was not just stupid young lusts here I had with time it was the love of life, that was taken by others by being in the wrong timeline.

Something more recondite sucks on into you and takes time away from your days and youth it catches this, to the circumstance that you do not grasp what you are going to do but have all times in life end, over not taking any more times of despondency, despair, sadness, grief, dejection, and gloom.

Zest... in time like authoring my story, eternally unsatisfied, remains perpetually in the significance that is approximate to develop, to write takes time, that indispensable book, a prominent author behaves no inadequacy to produce it without solely translating this from that, considering it previously survives in each one of us a story of truth.

These missions, including the responsibilities concerning an author, are these of each translator and your own story coming to the foreground like art, like a painting.

Emmah- We believe that we can change the status quo according to our wishes because this is the only happy solution we can see. We do not think about what usually happens, what is also a happy solution: things do not change, but through and what we want to change.

Truth is a view of things. Happiness has almost no purpose other than to make unhappiness possible. For every disease treated by doctors, they

infuriated ten healthy people by inoculating them with a virus thousand times more powerful than any microbe: the idea of a person getting sick.

Nevaeh- Is my mind also like the depths of another crib, and I feel like I am still sedding, even watching what is going on outside? When I saw an external object, I realized that I saw that it would stay between me and it, that it was lined with a thin spiritual boundary, preventing me from directly touching its substance: it would somehow evaporate before I could touch it, like an incandescent body bringing moisture near it because it always had an evaporation zone in front of it.

Emmah - Time has passed, and every word we say with lies becomes a reality bit by bit. The bond that unites us with another person is sacrosanct when we (she) judge one of our imperfections.

Nevaeh- I read a passage from my books, my dear friend: I have been dead almost three times since morning.

We are not alone but trapped in creatures from a different kingdom: our bodies. Death is a disease from which we recover...

Usually, it is second nature, it prevents us from knowing first, it is neither cruel nor magical. Some people say that beauty is the promise of

happiness. On the contrary, the possibility of happiness may be the beginning of beauty.

Your soul is a dark forest, but these trees are specific species, they are genealogical trees, and the memory of a particular image is nothing more than a pity for a given moment.

Once in our lives... When the ears listen to music cannot save what breathes moonlight through the silent flute, and even from a simpler and more realistic point of view, the country we aspire to occupy at any moment in our real lives is much larger than the country we happen to be in.

Because our love or our government is never a single, continuous, and inseparable passion. It consists of endless love, and a fit of different jealousy, each transient, and although it is uninterrupted, it gives us the illusion of continuity and solidarity.

Happiness is like a picture: in front of the person we love, we just take the negatives, we develop at home later, and when we have a dark inner room again, it is completely forbidden to open the door in the presence of others.

The places we know do not fully belong to the world of space in which we place them for greater comfort. It was only a small part of the constant impression of our lives at the time.

...The memory of the picture was no more than a moment of remorse; houses, roads, and paths were passing, unfortunately, as years.

...In one world, we think and call another. In between, we can build a reference system, but we can fill in the blanks.

Every reader finds himself. The author's work is merely a visual tool that enables the reader to distinguish what he would not have seen without the book.

The beautiful girls who passed, from the day I first knew that their cheeks could be accepted, became curious about their souls.

The universe seemed more interesting; more than friendship at the end no more than this or that is love and love has the end of all friendships, a lie that seeks to make us believe that we are not alone without treatment.

Our worst fears, like our great hopes, are not beyond our means, and we can finally come to win over the first and achieve the second. After a certain age, our memories are so intertwined with each other that what we think, the book we read, rarely matters anymore.

We have put something of ourselves everywhere, everything fertile, everything is dangerous, and we can make discoveries no less valuable than being a victim of time.

I nodded, numb, shell-shocked, and the words peeked at me and peered as if having energy and watched it unfold in my hand as I was pulled into the book and the memories to relive.

Emmah- She stands in line of a huge cafeteria hall with all that stand glass windows and gothic appearance of the castle that was in, and her mind approaches and causes her into overturning pages turn. With a smile that is - this shameful flirting, I see her in my past world and past day so she can see for herself my life.

I am worried about Naddalen and you should also worry about what I have seen those last 100 years, she is an impatient man. A bit of a hedonist. You have not waited for as much of anything yet as I can say.'

I- Emma, swallow hard and strive to keep calm, recalling not falling into her bait. Naddalin has a knack for identifying my weaknesses, my psychological strength, and life to exploit.

'Don't get me wrong, it has always been one to keep the doorways wearing arm badges that are black and white stripes, look unforgiving in waking up but trust me, ever, did the time to stick to her shoes before she was back on the lurking.

Looking to drown her sorrows in anything or should say who could her. And although you would rather not believe it, take it from someone who has been there all the time. Naddalin does not wait for anyone, and she certainly never waited for you.

Nevaeh- I do not know what it is about these girls around here they take down songs like it is a hotdog eating contest. All give head and go down like sluts. I have... like a brain-dead teenage girl. I remember brain transplants when I was with my mother and grandmother at their home, this is what they did to kids for their sick fun. I also remember getting peed on by a girl standing over my head, as she lifted her skirt in class. The teacher does nothing, but gives recesses, teachers like this all you want to do is use their face as a unnaïl.

To me, I think of it this way keeps being the nice girl, not an alpha cock chick, and when you think like this it is an all-natural selection of sex, like chimps in a habitation, jacking off and throwing shit at each other thinking one is the simpleton is just as under evolved as chimps at the petting zoo.

Remember that a Neanderthal still has evolved more than chimpanzees even if you think Neanderthals are what are in these kinds of classes. You have your classification now I have my classification for you, I see that you have not made it up to cave dweller standards.

I take a deep breath, fill my head with words, music, mathematical equations that extend beyond my skills, anything to drown out words that are like prudent arrows aimed directly at my heart.

'Yes.'

I saw it with my eyes, I did!

I smile as I slip into a thick cockney pronunciation and retreat again.
Have not seen this, too.

They broke our poor hearts.

Ready to bring this back no matter where she is at the now of her life, no questions, but to let it all go. Though, unlike me, I am afraid, quite unlike you Haven did not like it was unconditional. Let us face it, this is something you have never done as I did.

Haven said, 'Just to let you know Nevaeh you are Naddalin. You just do not remember making up a new life to end your old one. Wah, wah, wah, blah, blah, blah, shut up, Nevaeh.'

I swallow hard, forcing calm I do not have when I say, 'That's much further than I have ever got with Haven.'

'No thank you,' she spits, a harsh look at mine. 'But, as I said, I'm a man who can wait.'

Naddalin is not real, it is you.

Haven, she is shaking her head.

It is a shame you are too strong to play this game by yourself.

'I can suck in my breath; I do not want her to know Naddalin is made up.

I know that targetting the weaker timeless chakra, one of the seven power centers in the body, is the fastest way to blur them.

Nevaeh- 'I can kill you now,' she whispers, a shaky voice, hands trembling, even though I promised you that I would not, even though I knew better.

Haven- 'Slug me into my sacral center, maybe?'

'Can you what?' She smiles at me, facing imminent until closing her breath cools my cheek.

Nevaeh- I am arguing, wondering where she could have known.

However, she just laughs, shaking her head, saying, "Don't forget, I was totally under my spell. Which means she told me everything, answered every question he asked me, including a good little about you."

I have... Where it matters. And do not think she does not know that.

I stand there, refusing to respond, popping up to appear composed, unsettling, but too late.

Do not worry, I am having a lot of fun watching you writing to try something like that.

Just a moment later- 'I've no plans to go after you- she said.'

Besides, it will not be long until you are squirming beneath me.

Remember that- Treason- violate a duty, obligation, or promise. Impose misrepresentation of legislation. Given means, the easing or alleviation of a person's feelings of grief or distress.